

The Faerie Queene: Book III.

A Note on the Renascence Editions text:

This HTML etext of *The Faerie Queene* was prepared from *The Complete Works in Verse and Prose of Edmund Spenser* [Grosart, London, 1882] by R.S. Bear at the University of Oregon and updated and glossed by Jean Arrington at Peace College, Raleigh N.C. The text is in the public domain. Unique content is copyright © 1995 University of Oregon and 2005 Jean Arrington; this text is distributed for nonprofit use only. Comments and emendations to: rbear@oregon.uoregon.edu and jarrington@peace.edu.

THE THIRD BOOKE OF THE FAERIE QVEENE.

Contayning,

THE LEGEND OF BRITOMARTIS.

OR

Of Chastitie.

1

I T falles me here to write of Chastity,
That fairest vertue, farre aboue the rest;
For which what needs me fetch from *Faery*
Forreine ensamples, it to haue exprest?
Sith it is shrined in my Soueraines brest,
And form'd so liuely in each perfect part
That to all Ladies, which haue it profest,
Need but behold the pourtraict of her hart
If pourtrayd it might be by any liuing art.

sith: since My Sovereign: Elizabeth I

2

But liuing art may not least part expresse,
Nor life-resembling pencill it can paint,
All were it *Zeuxis* or *Praxiteles*:
His daedale hand would faile, and greatly faint,
And her perfections with his error taint:
Ne Poets wit, that passeth Painter farre
In picturing the parts of beautie daint,
So hard a workmanship aduventure darre,
For fear through want of words her excellence to marre.

Zeuxis and *Praxiteles*: Famous Greek artists of the 4th century BC.
daedale: skillful

How then shall I, Apprentice of the skill,
 That whylome in diuine wits did raine,
 Presume so high to stretch mine humble quill?
 Yet now my lucklesse lot doth me constraîne
 Hereto perforce. But ô dred Soueraine
 Thus farre forth pardon, sith that choicest wit
 Cannot your glorious pourtraict figure plaine
 That I in colour showes may shadow it,
 And antique praises vnto present persons fit.

whyrome: formerly quill: pen constrain: force
 perforce: of necessity

But if in liuing colours, and right hew,
 Your selfe you couet to see pictured,
 Who can it doe more liuely, or more trew,
 Then that sweet verse, with *Nectar* sprinckeled,
 In which a gracious seruant pictured
 His *Cynthia*, his heauens fairest light?
 That with his melting sweetness rauished,
 And with the wonder of her beames bright,
 My senses lulled are in slomber of delight.

nectar: food of the gods servant: i.e. Sir Walter Raleigh
 Cynthia: goddess of the moon and chastity, also Diana (Raleigh's
 poem *Cynthia* praises Queen Elizabeth's virtues.

But let that same delitious Poet lend
 A little leaue vnto a rusticke Muse
 To sing his mistresse prayse, and let him mend,
 If ought amis her liking may abuse:
 Ne let his fairest *Cynthia* refuse,
 In mirrours more then one her selfe to see,
 But either *Gloriana* let her chuse,
 Or in *Belphoebe* fashioned to bee:
 In th'one her rule, in th'other her rare chastitee.

Gloriana: Queen of Faerieland
 Belphoebe: a beautiful woman who will be a character in Canto V

Canto I.

*Guyon encountreth Britomart,
 faire Florimell is chaced:
 Duessaes traines and Malecastaes
 champions are defaced.*

Guyon: The protagonist of Book 2 (He represents Tolerance).
 Duessa: a character from Books 1 & 2 who in fact doesn't appear in
 this canto. traines: tricks

The famous Briton Prince and Faerie knight,
 After long wayes and perillous paines endured,
 Hauing their wearie limbes to perfect plight
 Restord, and sory wounds right well recured,
 Of the faire *Alma* greatly were procured,
 To make there lenger soiourne and abode;
 But when thereto they might not be allured,
 From seeking praise, and deeds of armes abrode,
 They courteous conge tooke, and forth together yode.

Briton Prince: Arthur Faerie knight: Guyon plight: condition
Alma: a char. from Bk 2 procured: urged conge: leave yode: went

But the captiu'd *Acrasia* he sent,
 Because of trauell long, a nigher way,
 With a strong gard, all reskew to preuent,
 And her to Faerie court safe to conuay,
 That her for wnesse of his hard assay,
 Vnto his *Faerie* Queene he might present:
 But he him selfe betooke another way,
 To make more triall of his hardiment,
 And seeke aduentures, as he with Prince *Arthur* went.

Acrasia: another character from Book 2 he: Guyon
 nigher: nearer assay: trial hardiment: hardihood, boldness

Long so they trauelled through wastefull wayes,
 Where daungers dwelt, and perils most did wonne,
 To hunt for glorie and renommed praise;
 Full many Countries they did ouerronne,
 From the vprising to the setting Sunne,
 And many hard aduentures did atchieue;
 Of all the which they honour euer wonne,
 Seeking the weake oppressed to relieue,
 And to recouer right for such, as wrong did grieue.

wonne: dwell

At last as through an open plaine they yode,
 They spide a knight, that towards pricked faire,
 And him beside an aged Squire there rode,
 That seem'd to couch vnder his shield three-square,
 As if that age bad him that burden spare,
 And yield it those, that stouter could it wield:
 He them espying, gan himselfe prepare,
 And on his arme addresse his goodly shield
 That bore a Lion passant in a golden field.

pricked: rode couch: crouch bad: told
 a Lion passant (walking) in a golden field (background): the image
 on the shield of Brute, Britomart's ancestor and the legendary
 founder of Britain; cf. 9.38-51.

Which seeing good Sir *Guyon*, deare besought
 The Prince of grace, to let him runne that turne.
 He graunted: then the Faery quickly raught
 His poinant speare, and sharpely gan to spurne
 His fomy steed, whose fierie feete did burne
 The verdant grasse, as he thereon did tread;
 Ne did the other backe his foot returne,
 But fiercely forward came withouten dread,
 And bent his dreadfull speare against the others head.

poinant: pointed spurne: spur steed: horse verdant: green

They bene ymet, and both their points arriued,
 But *Guyon* droue so furious and fell,
 That seem'd both shield & plate it would haue riued;
 Nathelesse it bore his foe not from his sell,
 But made him stagger, as he were not well:
 But *Guyon* selfe, ere well he was aware,
 Nigh a speares length behind his crouper fell,
 Yet in his fall so well him selfe he bare,
 That mischieuous mischance his life & limbes did spare.

fell: deadly rived: split nathelesse: nevertheless
 sell: seat, saddle ere: before nigh: nearly
 crouper: harness around a horse's tail bare: bore, handled

Great shame and sorrow of that fall he tooke;
 For neuer yet, sith warlike armes he bore,
 And shiuering speare in bloudie field first shooke,
 He found himselfe dishonored so sore.
 Ah gentlest knight, that euer armour bore,
 Let not thee grieue dismounted to haue beene,
 And brought to ground, that neuer wast before;
 For not thy fault, but secret powre vnseene,
 That speare enchanted was, which layd thee on the greene.

sith: since speare enchanted: represents the power of chastity

But weenedst thou what wight thee ouerthrew,
 Much greater griefe and shamefuller regret
 For thy hard fortune then thou wouldst renew,
 That of a single damzell thou wert met
 On equall plaine, and there so hard beset;
 Euen the famous *Britomart* it was,
 Whom straunge aduenture did from *Britaine* fet,
 To seeke her louer (loue farre sought alas.)
 Whose image she had seene in *Venus* looking glass.

weenedst thou: knowest thou (if you knew) wight: person
 damzell: girl fet: fetch Venus: goddess of love
 [Britomart means "Sweet maid," but also sounds like "British Mars." She was one of the nymphs of Diana's retinue, according to Callimachus (3rd c BCE).]

Full of disdainfull wrath, he fierce vprose,
 For to reuenge that foule reprochfull shame,
 And snatching his bright sword began to close
 With her on foot, and stoutly forward came;
 Die rather would he, then endure that same.
 Which when his Palmer saw, he gan to feare
 His toward perill and vntoward blame,
 Which by that new rencounter he should reare:
 For death sate on the point of that enchanted speare.

wrath: anger Guyon's Palmer: his companion (a palmer made a pilgrimage to Palestine and brought back a palm branch as a token)
 line 7: his imminent danger and unlucky injury

And hasting towards him gan faire perswade,
 Not to prouoke misfortune, nor to weene
 His speares default to mend with cruell blade;
 For by his mightie Science he had seene
 The secret vertue of that weapon keene,
 That mortall puissance mote not withstood:
 Nothing on earth mote alwaies happie beene.
 Great hazard were it, and aduenture fond,
 To loose long gotten honour with one euill hond.

gan: began weene: think vertue: power puissance: power
 mote: might fond: foolish hond: action

By such good meanes he him discourselled,
 From prosecuting his reuenging rage;
 And eke the Prince like treaty handeled,
 His wrathfull will with reason to asswage,
 And laid the blame, not to his carriage,
 But to his starting steed, that swaru'd asyde,
 And to the ill purueyance of his page,
 That had his furnitures not firmly tyde:
 So is his angry courage fairely pacifyde.

eke: also treaty: entreaty, request asswage: make mild
 carriage: conduct purueyance: preparation page: servant
 furnitures: gear

Thus reconcilment was betweene them knit,
 Through goodly temperance, and affection chaste,
 And either vovd with all their power and wit,
 To let not others honour be defaste,
 Of friend or foe, who euer it embaste,
 Ne armes to beare against the others syde:
 In which accord the Prince was also plaste,
 And with that golden chaine of concord tyde.
 So goodly all agreed, they forth yfere did ryde.

embaste: debased, dishonored yfere: together

O goodly vsage of those antique times,
 In which the sword was seruant vnto right;
 When not for malice and contentious crimes,
 But all for praise, and prooffe of manly might,
 The martiall brood accustomed to fight:
 Then honour was the meed of victorie,
 And yet the vanquished had no despight:
 Let later age that noble vse enuie,
 Vile rancour to auoid, and cruell surquedrie.

martiall brood: warlike race meed: reward
 despight: scornful defiance envie: imitate
 surquedrie: pride, arrogance

Long they thus trauelled in friendly wise,
 Through countries waste, and eke well edifyde,
 Seeking aduentures hard, to exercise
 Their puissance, whylome full dernely tryde:
 At length they came into a forrest wyde,
 Whose hideous horror and sad trembling sound
 Full griesly seem'd: therein they long did ryde,
 Yet tract of liuing creatures none they found,
 Saue Beares, Lions, & Buls, which romed them around.

eke: also edifyde: built up puissance: power whylome: in the past
 dernely: severely griesly:horrible Save: except

All suddenly out of the thickest brush,
 Vpon a milk-white Palfrey all alone,
 A goodly Ladie did foreby them rush,
 Whose face did seeme as cleare as Christall stone,
 And eke through feare as white as whales bone:
 Her garments all were wrought of beaten gold,
 And all her steed with tinsell trappings shone,
 Which fled so fast, that nothing mote him hold,
 And scarce them leasure gaue, her passing to behold.

palfrey: horse foreby: past tinsell: glittering mote: might

Still as she fled, her eye she backward threw,
 As fearing euill, that pursewd her fast;
 And her faire yellow locks behind her flew,
 Loosely disperst with puffe of euery blast:
 All as a blazing starre doth farre outcast
 His hearie beames, and flaming lockes dispreed,
 At sight whereof the people stand aghast:
 But the sage wisard telles, as he has red,
 That it importunes death and dolefull drerihed.

blazing star: comet (An ominous sign but also a symbol of love and
 rarity) hearie: hairy sage: wise red: foreseen
 importunes: portends dolefull drerihed: sorrowful misery

So as they gazed after her a while,
 Lo where a griesly Foster forth did rush,
 Breathing out beastly lust her to defile:
 His tyreling iade he fiercely forth did push,
 Through thicke and thin, both ouer banke and bush
 In hope her to attaine by hooke or crooke,
 That from his gorie sides the bloud did gush:
 Large were his limbes, and terrible his looke,
 And in his clownish hand a sharp bore speare he shooke.

grisly Foster: horrible forester, woodsman, symbol of lust
 tyreling jade: weary horse clownish: rustic

Which outrage when those gentle knights did see,
 Full of great enuie and fell gealosity,
 They stayd not to auise, who first should bee,
 But all spurd after fast, as they mote fly,
 To reskew her from shamefull villany.
 The Prince and *Guyon* equally byliue
 Her selfe pursewd, in hope to win thereby
 Most goodly meede, the fairest Dame aliuie:
 But after the foule foster *Timias* did striue.

line 2: Full of great indignation and deadly anger
 byliue: quickly Timias: *time* in Greek means *honor*.

The whiles faire *Britomart*, whose constant mind,
 Would not so lightly follow beauties chace,
 Ne rekt of Ladies Loue, did stay behind,
 And them awayted there a certaine space,
 To weet if they would turne backe to that place:
 But when she saw them gone, she forward went,
 As lay her iourney, through that perlous Pace,
 With stedfast courage and stout hardiment;
 Ne euill thing she fear'd, ne euill thing she ment.

rekt: cared to weet: to know
 perlous Pace: perilous region ment: meant, intended

At last as nigh out of the wood she came,
 A stately Castle farre away she spyde,
 To which her steps directly she did frame.
 That Castle was most goodly edifyde,
 And plaste for pleasure nigh that forrest syde:
 But faire before the gate a spatious plaine,
 Mantled with greene, it selfe did spredden wyde,
 On which she saw sixe knights, that did darraine
 Fierce battell against one, with cruell might and maine.

nigh: nearly, near edifyde: built darraine: prepare maine: force

Mainly they all attonce vpon him laid,
 And sore beset on euery side around,
 That nigh he breathlesse grew, yet nought dismayd,
 Ne euer to them yielded foot of ground
 All had he lost much bloud through many a wound,
 But stoutly dealt his blowes, and euery way
 To which he turned in his wrathfull stound,
 Made them recoile, and fly from dred decay,
 That none of all the sixe before, him durst assay.

Mainly: violently attonce: at once All: although
 stound: trouble decay: destruction durst assay: dared try to attack

Like dastard Curres, that hauing at a bay
 The saluage beast embost in wearie chace,
 Dare not aduenture on the stubborne pray,
 Ne byte before, but rome from place to place,
 To get a snatch, when turned is his face.
 In such distresse and doubtfull ieopardy,
 When *Britomart* him saw, she ran a pace
 Vnto his reskew, and with earnest cry,
 Bad those same sixe forbear that single enimy.

Curres: curs, dogs embost: overwhelmed
 a pace: quickly forbear: refrain or desist from

But to her cry they list not lenden eare,
 Ne ought the more their mightie strokes surceasse,
 But gathering him round about more neare,
 Their direfull rancour rather did encrease;
 Till that she rushing through the thickest preasse,
 Perforce disparted their compacted gyre,
 And soone compeld to hearken vnto peace:
 Tho gan she myldly of them to inquirye
 The cause of their dissention and outrageous yre.

list no lenden ears: didn't want to listen surcease: stop
 preasse: crowd Perforce: by force gyre: circle hearken: listen
 Tho: then gan: began dissention: disagreement yre: ire, anger

Whereto that single knight did answer frame;
 These sixe would me enforce by oddes of might,
 To chaunge my lief, and loue another Dame,
 That death me liefer were, then such despight,
 So vnto wrong to yield my wrested right:
 For I loue one, the truest one on ground,
 Ne list me chaunge; she th'*Errant Damzell* hight,
 For whose deare sake full many a bitter stownd,
 I haue endur'd, and tasted many a bloody wound.

lief: beloved liefer: preferable Ne list me change: Nor do I
 want to change hight: named stownd: time of trouble

Certes (said she) then bene ye sixe to blame,
 To weene your wrong by force to iustifie:
 For knight to leaue his Ladie were great shame,
 That faithfull is, and better were to die.
 All losse is lesse, and lesse the infamie,
 Then losse of loue to him, that loues but one;
 Ne may loue be compeld by maisterie;
 For soone as maisterie comes, sweet loue anone
 Taketh his nimble wings, and soone away is gone.

Certes: surely weene: think infamie: shame Then: Than
 compeld by maisterie: forced by mastery anon: at once
 Lines 7-9 echo Chaucer's *The Fraunklin's Tale*.

Then spake one of those sixe, There dwelleth here
 Within this castle wall a Ladie faire,
 Whose soueraine beautie hath no liuing pere,
 Thereto so bounteous and so debonaire,
 That neuer any mote with her compaire.
 She hath ordaind this law, which we approue,
 That euery knight, which doth this way repaire,
 In case he haue no Ladie, nor no loue,
 Shall doe vnto her seruice neuer to remoue.

pere: peer, equal repaire: travel

But if he haue a Ladie or a Loue,
 Then must he her forgoe with foule defame,
 Or else with vs by dint of sword approue,
 That she is fairer, then our fairest Dame,
 As did this knight, before ye hither came.
 Perdie (said *Britomart*) the choise is hard:
 But what reward had he, that ouercame?
 He should aduanced be to high regard,
 (Said they) and haue our Ladies loue for his reward.

forgoe: give up hither: here Perdie: Truly

Therefore aread Sir, if thou haue a loue.
 Loue haue I sure, (quoth she) but Lady none;
 Yet will I not fro mine owne loue remoue,
 Ne to your Lady will I seruice done,
 But wreake your wrongs wrought to this knight alone,
 And proue his cause. With that her mortall speare
 She mightily auentred towards one,
 And downe him smot, ere well aware he weare,
 Then to the next she rode, & downe the next did beare.

aread: tell quoth: said wreake: avenge wrought: done
 auentred: thrust smot: knocked (past tense of *smite*) weare: were

Ne did she stay, till three on ground she layd,
 That none of them himselfe could reare againe;
 The fourth was by that other knight dismayd,
 All were he wearie of his former paine,
 That now there do but two of six remaine;
 Which two did yield, before she did them smight.
 Ah (said she then) now may ye all see plaine,
 That truth is strong, and trew loue most of might,
 That for his trusty seruauents doth so strongly fight.

All: Although smight: smite, hit

30

Too well we see, (said they) and proue too well
 Our faulty weaknesse, and your matchlesse might:
 For thy, faire Sir, yours be the Damozell,
 Which by her owne law to your lot doth light,
 And we your liege men faith vnto you plight.
 So vnderneath her feet their swords they mard,
 And after her besought, well as they might,
 To enter in, and reape the dew reward:
 She graunted, and then in they all together far'd.

For thy: therefore liege men: vassals plight: pledge
 mard: They broke the blades of their swords and threw them at
 Britomart's feet to show their defeat. far'd: went

31

Long were it to describe the goodly frame,
 And stately port of *Castle Ioyeous*,
 (For so that Castle hight by commune name)
 Where they were entertaind with curteous
 And comely glee of many gracious
 Faire Ladies, and of many a gentle knight,
 Who through a Chamber long and spacious,
 Eftsoones them brought vnto their Ladies sight,
 That of them cleeped was the *Lady of delight*.

port: appearance comely glee: pleasing cheer
 Eftsoones: presently cleeped: called

32

But for to tell the sumptuous aray
 Of that great chamber, should be labour lost:
 For liuing wit, I weene, cannot display
 The royall riches and exceeding cost,
 Of euery pillour and of euery post;
 Which all of purest bullion framed were,
 And with great pearles and pretious stones embost,
 That the bright glisten of their beames cleare
 Did sparckle forth great light, and glorious did appeare.

Aray: decoration, appearance bullion: gold embost: adorned

These straunger knights through passing, forth were led
 Into an inner rowme, whose royaltee
 And rich purueyance might vneath be red;
 Mote Princes place beseeme so deckt to bee.
 Which stately manner when as they did see,
 The image of superfluous riotize,
 Exceeding much the state of meane degree,
 They greatly wondred, whence so sumptuous guize
 Might be maintaynd, and each gan diuersely deuize.

Line 3: And luxurious richness might hardly be described
 superfluous riotize: excessive extravagance
 meane degree: low class guize: way of life devise: guess

34

The wals were round about apparelled
 With costly clothes of *Arras* and of *Toure*,
 In which with cunning hand was pourtrahed
 The loue of *Venus* and her Paramoure
 The faire *Adonis*, turned to a flowre,
 A worke of rare deuice, and wondrous wit.
 First did it shew the bitter balefull stowre,
 Which her assayd with many a feruent fit,
 When first her tender hart was with his beautie smit.

Arras & Toure: major medieval trading towns in the Middle East
 Paramour: lover (The myth of Venus and Adonis appears in Ovid's
Metamorphoses.) balefull stowre: deadly turmoil smit: hit

35

Then with what sleights and sweet allurements she
 Entyst the Boy, as well that art she knew,
 And wooed him her Paramoure to be;
 Now making girlonds of each flowre that grew,
 To crowne his golden lockes with honour dew;
 Now leading him into a secret shade
 From his Beauperes, and from bright heauens vew,
 Where him to sleepe she gently would perswade,
 Or bathe him in a fountaine by some couert glade.

sleights: tricks Beauperes: fair companions covert glade: hidden valley

36

And whilst he slept, she ouer him would spred
 Her mantle, colour'd like the starry skyes,
 And her soft arme lay vnderneath his hed,
 And with ambrosiall kisses bathe his eyes;
 And whilst he bath'd, with her two crafty spyes,
 She secretly would search each daintie lim,
 And throw into the well sweet Rosemaryes,
 And fragrant violets, and Pances trim,
 And euer with sweet Nectar she did sprinkle him.

mantle: cape Rosemaryes, violets, Pances (pansies): Flower
 imagery for remembrance, sexual desire, and thoughts of death.

So did she steale his heedelesse hart away,
 And ioyd his loue in secret vnespyde.
 But for she saw him bent to cruell play,
 To hunt the saluage beast in forrest wyde,
 Dreadfull of daunger, that mote him betyde,
 She oft and oft aduiz'd him to refraine
 From chase of greater beasts, whose brutish pryde
 Mote breede him scath vnwares: but all in vaine;
 For who can shun the chaunce, that dest'ny doth ordaine?

mote him betyde: might happen to him
 mote breede him scath: might bring him harm

Lo, where beyond he lyeth languishing,
 Deadly engored of a great wild Bore,
 And by his side the Goddesse groueling
 Makes for him endlesse mone, and euermore
 With her soft garment wipes away the gore,
 Which staines his snowy skin with hatefull hew:
 But when she saw no helpe might him restore,
 Him to a dainty flowre she did transmew,
 Which in that cloth was wrought, as if it liuely grew.

languishing: suffering transmew: transform lively: actually

So was that chamber clad in goodly wize,
 And round about it many beds were dight,
 As whilome was the antique worldes guize,
 Some for vntimely ease, some for delight,
 As pleased them to vse, that vse it might:
 And all was full of Damzels, and of Squires,
 Dauncing and reueling both day and night,
 And swimming deepe in sensuall desires,
 And *Cupid* still amongst them kindled lustfull fires.

dight: placed whilome: formerly guize: custom

And all the while sweet Musicke did diuide
 Her looser notes with *Lydian* harmony;
 And all the while sweet birdes thereto applide
 Their daintie layes and dulcet melody,
 Ay caroling of loue and iollity,
 That wonder was to heare their trim consort.
 Which when those knights beheld, with scornefull eye,
 They sdeigned such lasciuious disport,
 And loath'd the loose demeanure of that wanton sort.

Lydian harmony: soft, soothing music thought to stimulate immoral thoughts and actions in young people. layes: songs dulcet: sweet
 Ay: Always sdeigned: disdained

Thence they were brought to that great Ladies vew,
 Whom they found sitting on a sumptuous bed,
 That glistred all with gold and glorious shew,
 As the proud *Persian* Queenes accustomed:
 She seemd a woman of great bountihed,
 And of rare beautie, sauing that askaunce
 Her wanton eyes, ill signes of womanhed,
 Did roll too highly, and too often glauce,
 Without regard of grace, or comely amenaunce.

bountihed: virtue saving: except wanton: immodest, flirtatious
 askaunce: sideways comely amenaunce: suitable behavior

Long worke it were, and needlesse to deuize
 Their goodly entertainment and great glee:
 She caused them be led in curteous wize
 Into a bowre, disarmed for to bee,
 And cheared well with wine and spiceree:
 The *Redcrosse* Knight was soone disarmed there,
 But the braue Mayd would not disarmed bee,
 But onely vented vp her vmbriere,
 And so did let her goodly visage to appere.

bower: bedroom umbriere: visor of a helmet visage: face

As when faire *Cynthia*, in darkesome night,
 Is in a noyous cloud enueloped,
 Where she may find the substaunce thin and light,
 Breakes forth her siluer beames, and her bright hed
 Discouers to the world discomfited;
 Of the poore traueller, that went astray,
 With thousand blessings she is heried;
 Such was the beautie and the shining ray,
 With which faire *Britomart* gaue light vnto the day.

Cynthia: goddess of the moon noyous: annoying, noxious
 Discovers: reveals discomfited: dejected heried: praised

And eke those six, which lately with her fought,
 Now were disarmd, and did them selues present
 Vnto her vew, and company vnsoght;
 For they all seemed curteous and gent,
 And all sixe brethren, borne of one parent,
 Which had them traynd in all ciuilitee,
 And goodly taught to tilt and turnament;
 Now were they liegemen to this Lady free,
 And her knights seruice ought, to hold of her in fee.

Gent: gentle ciuilitee: courtesy tilt and turnament: joust
 liegemen to this Lady free: loyal followers of this noble Lady
 last line: And owed her knightly service, as their feudal obligation

The first of them by name *Gardante* hight,
 A iolly person, and of comely vew;
 The second was *Parlante*, a bold knight,
 And next to him *Iocante* did ensew;
Basciante did him selfe most curteous shew;
 But fierce *Bacchante* seemd too fell and keene;
 And yet in armes *Noctante* greater grew:
 All were faire knights, and goodly well beseene,
 But to faire *Britomart* they all but shadowes beene.

hight: was called iolly: handsome, lively fell: deadly
 The names of the knights who attend on Malecasta represent stages
 of lechery: *looking, talking, joking, kissing, drinking, night revelry.*

For she was full of amiable grace,
 And manly terrour mixed therewithall,
 That as the one stird vp affections bace,
 So th'other did mens rash desires apall,
 And hold them backe, that would in error fall;
 As he, that hath espide a vermeill Rose,
 To which sharpe thornes and breres the way forstall,
 Dare not for dread his hardy hand expose,
 But wishing it far off, his idle wish doth lose.

appall: weaken vermeil: crimson
 This is an important stanza for understanding the essence of Britomart
 – the aspects of her femininity.

Whom when the Lady saw so faire a wight.
 All ignoraunt of her contrary sex,
 (For she her weend a fresh and lusty knight)
 She greatly gan enamoured to wex,
 And with vaine thoughts her falsed fancy vex:
 Her fickle hart conceiued hasty fire,
 Like sparkes of fire, which fall in slender flex,
 That shortly brent into extreme desire,
 And ransackt all her veines with passion entire.

wight: man weend: thought wex: grow flex: flax brent: burned

Eftsoones she grew to great impatience
 And into termes of open outrage brust,
 That plaine discovered her incontinence,
 Ne reckt she, who her meaning did mistrust;
 For she was giuen all to fleshly lust,
 And poured forth in sensuall delight,
 That all regard of shame she had discust,
 And meet respect of honour put to flight:
 So shamelesse beauty soone becomes a loathy sight.

Eftsoones: as soon as reckt: cared discust: thrown off meet: proper

Faire Ladies, that to loue captiued arre,
 And chaste desires do nourish in your mind,
 Let not her fault your sweet affections marre,
 Ne blot the bounty of all womankind;
 'Mongst thousands good one wanton Dame to find:
 Eamongst the Roses grow some wicked weeds;
 For this was not to loue, but lust inclind;
 For loue does alwayes bring forth bounteous deeds,
 And in each gentle hart desire of honour breeds.

bounty: virtue, goodness

Nought so of loue this looser Dame did skill,
 But as a coale to kindle fleshly flame,
 Giuing the bridle to her wanton will,
 And treading vnder foote her honest name:
 Such loue is hate, and such desire is shame.
 Still did she roue at her with crafty glaunce
 Of her false eyes, that at her hart did ayme,
 And told her meaning in her countenance;
 But *Britomart* dissembled it with ignorance.

this looser Dame did skill: this too loose woman did understand
 roue: shoot (as in "shot her a glance") countenance: face
 dissembled it with ignorance: pretended not to understand her meaning

Supper was shortly dight and downe they sat,
 Where they were serued with all sumptuous fare,
 Whiles fruitfull *Ceres*, and *Lyæus* fat
 Pourd out their plenty, without spight or spare:
 Nought wanted there, that dainty was and rare;
 And aye the cups their bancks did ouerflow,
 And aye betweene the cups, she did prepare
 Way to her loue, and secret darts did throw;
 But *Britomart* would not such guilfull message know.

dight: set out *Ceres* (Demeter) was the goddess of earth and its
 fruits; *Lyæus* (Bacchus), the god of wine; thus (by metonymy), food
 and drink were plenteously provided. aye: always
 without spight or spare: without grudge or restraint darts: glances

So when they slaked had the feruent heat
 Of appetite with meates of euery sort,
 The Lady did faire *Britomart* entreat,
 Her to disarme, and with delightfull sport
 To loose her warlike limbs and strong effort,
 But when she mote not thereunto be wonne,
 (For she her sexe vnder that straunge purport
 Did vse to hide, and plaine appaurance shonne:)
 In plainer wise to tell her grieuance she begonne.

entreat: urge mote: might purport: appearance shonne: shunned

And all atonce discovered her desire
 With sighes, and sobs, and plaints, & piteous grieffe,
 The outward sparkes of her in burning fire;
 Which spent in vaine, at last she told her briefe,
 That but if she did lend her short reliefe,
 And do her comfort, she mote algates dye.
 But the chaste damzell, that had neuer priefe
 Of such malengine and fine forgerie,
 Did easily beleeeue her strong extremitie.

algates: altogether priefe: proof malengine: deceit

Full easie was for her to haue beliefe,
 Who by self-feeling of her feeble sexe,
 And by long triall of the inward grieffe,
 Wherewith imperious loue her hart did vexe,
 Could iudge what paines do louing harts perplexe.
 Who meanes no guile, be guiled soonest shall,
 And to faire semblaunce doth light faith annexe;
 The bird, that knowes not the false fowlers call,
 Into his hidden net full easily doth fall.

guile: trickery semblaunce: appearance annexe: add

For thy, she would not in discourteise wise,
 Scorne the faire offer of good will profest;
 For great rebuke it is, loue to despise,
 Or rudely sdeigne a gentle harts request;
 But with faire countenance, as beseemed best,
 Her entertaynd; nath'lesse she inly deemd
 Her loue too light, to wooe a wandring guest:
 Which she misconstruing, thereby esteemd
 That from like inward fire that outward smoke had steemd.

For thy: Therefore sdeigne: disdained inly deemed: inwardly thought

Therewith a while she her flit fancy fed,
 Till she mote winne fit time for her desire,
 But yet her wound still inward freshly bled,
 And through her bones the false instilled fire
 Did spred it selfe, and venime close inspire.
 Tho were the tables taken all away,
 And euery knight, and euery gentle Squire
 Gan choose his dame with *Bascimani* gay,
 With whom he meant to make his sport & courtly play.

mote: might Tho: then *Bascimani*: hand kissing

Some fell to daunce, some fell to hazardry,
 Some to make loue, some to make meriment,
 As diuerse wits to diuers things apply;
 And all the while faire *Malecasta* bent
 Her crafty engins to her close intent.
 By this th'eternall lampes, wherewith high *Ioue*
 Doth light the lower world, were halfe yspent,
 And the moist daughters of huge *Atlas* stroue
 Into the *Ocean* deepe to driue their weary droue.

hazardry: gambling diurse, diuers: diverse, various
Malecasta: means "ill-chaste" engines: wiles, tricks
Ioue: Jove, Jupiter the moist daughters of huge Atlas: the Hyades,
 stars in the constellation Taurus drove: boat

High time it seemed then for euery wight
 Them to betake vnto their kindly rest;
 Eftsoones long waxen torches weren light,
 Vnto their bowres to guiden euery guest:
 Tho when the Britonesse saw all the rest
 Auoided quite, she gan her selfe despoile,
 And safe commit to her soft fethered nest,
 Where through long watch, & late dayes weary toile,
 She soundly slept, & carefull thoughts did quite assoile.

wight: person bowres: bedrooms despoile: undress
 assoile: let loose

Now whenas all the world in silence deepe
 Yshrowded was, and euery mortall wight
 Was drowned in the depth of deadly sleepe,
 Faire *Malecasta*, whose engrieued spright
 Could find no rest in such perplexed plight,
 Lightly arose out of her wearie bed,
 And vnder the blacke vele of guilty Night,
 Her with a scarlot mantle couered,
 That was with gold and Ermines faire enuveloped.

spright: spirit plight: condition vele: vail mantle: cloak
 Ermines: fur

Then panting soft, and trembling euerie ioynt,
 Her fearfull feete towards the bowre she moued;
 Where she for secret purpose did appoynt
 To lodge the warlike mayd vnwisely loued,
 And to her bed approaching, first she prooued,
 Whether she slept or wakt, with her soft hand
 She softly felt, if any member moued,
 And lent her wary eare to vnderstand,
 If any puffe of breath, or signe of sence she fand.

Which whenas none she fond, with easie shift,
 For feare least her vnwares she should abrayd,
 Th'embroderd quilt she lightly vp did lift,
 And by her side her selfe she softly layd,
 Of euery finest fingers touch affrayd;
 Ne any noise she made, ne word she spake,
 But inly sigh'd. At last the royall Mayd
 Out of her quiet slomber did awake,
 And chaungd her weary side, the better ease to take.

abrayd: awake inly: inwardly

Where feeling one close couched by her side,
 She lightly left out of her filed bed,
 And to her weapon ran, in minde to gride
 The loathed leachour. But the Dame halfe ded
 Through suddein feare and ghastly drierihed,
 Did shrieke alowd, that through the house it rong,
 And the whole family therewith adred,
 Rashly out of their rouzed couches sprong,
 And to the troubled chamber all in armes did throng.

filed: defiled gride: pierce drierihed: horror adred: afraid

And those six Knights that Ladies Champions,
 And eke the *Redcrosse* knight ran to the stownd,
 Halfe armd and halfe vnarmd, with them attons:
 Where when confusedly they came, they fownd
 Their Lady lying on the sencelesse grownd;
 On th'other side, they saw the warlike Mayd
 All in her snow-white smocke, with locks vnbownd,
 Threatning the point of her auenging blade,
 That with so troublous terrour they were all dismayde.

eke: also stownd: disturbance attons: at once

About their Lady first they flockt arownd,
 Whom hauing laid in comfortable couch,
 Shortly they reard out of her frosen swownd;
 And afterwards they gan with fowle reproch
 To stirre vp strife, and troublous contecke broch:
 But by ensample of the last dayes losse,
 None of them rashly durst to her approach,
 Ne in so glorious spoile themselues embosse;
 Her succourd eke the Champion of the bloody Crosse.

swownd: faint
 troublous contecke broch: instigate troublous discord
 durst: dared embosse: cover succourd: helped

But one of those sixe knights, *Gardante* hight,
 Drew out a deadly bow and arrow keene,
 Which forth he sent with felonous despight,
 And fell intent against the virgin sheene:
 The mortall steele stayd not, till it was seene
 To gore her side, yet was the wound not deepe,
 But lightly rased her soft silken skin,
 That drops of purple bloud thereout did weepe,
 Which did her lilly smock with staines of vermeil steepe.

hight: named fell: deadly sheene: bright steepe: soak

Wherewith enrag'd she fiercely at them flew,
 And with her flaming sword about her layd,
 That none of them foule mischiefe could eschew,
 But with her dreadfull strokes were all dismayd:
 Here, there, and euery where about her swayd
 Her wrathfull steele, that none mote it abide;
 And eke the *Redcrosse* knight gaue her good aid,
 Ay ioyning foot to foot, and side to side,
 That in short space their foes they haue quite terrifide.

eschew: avoid mote it abide: might withstand it
 eke: also ay: always

Tho whenas all were put to shamefull flight,
 The noble *Britomartis* her arayd,
 And her bright armes about her body dight:
 For nothing would she lenger there be stayd,
 Where so loose life, and so vngentle trade
 Was vsd of Knights and Ladies seeming gent:
 So earely ere the grosse Earthes gryesy shade
 Was all disperst out of the firmament,
 They tooke their steeds, & forth vpō their iourney went.

Tho: then arayd: dressed dight: put gent: gentle
 ere: before gryesy: horrible steeds: horses vpo: upon

Cant. II.

*The Redcrosse knight to Britomart
 describeth Artegall:*

*The wondrous myrrhour, by which she
 in loue with him did fall.*

Here haue I cause, in men iust blame to find,
 That in their proper prayse too partiall bee,
 And not indifferent to woman kind,
 To whom no share in armes and cheualrie
 They do impart, ne maken memorie
 Of their braue gestes and prowesse martiall;
 Scarse do they spare to one or two or three,
 Rowme in their writs; yet the same writing small
 Does all their deeds deface, and dims their glories all.

proper: own indifferent: impartial cheualrie: chivalry impart: allow
 gestes: exploits prowess martial: warlike bravery writs: writings

But by record of antique times I find,
 That women wont in warres to beare most sway,
 And to all great exploits them selues inclind:
 Of which they still the girlond bore away,
 Till enuious Men fearing their rules decay,
 Gan coyne streight lawes to curb their liberty;
 Yet sith they warlike armes haue layd away:
 They haue exceld in artes and pollicy,
 That now we foolish men that prayse gin eke t'enuy.

wont: were accustomed girlond: victory wreath
 Gan coyne straight lawes: Began to create strict laws
 sith: since policy: statecraft gin eke: begin also

Of warlike puissaunce in ages spent,
 Be thou faire *Britomart*, whose prayse I write,
 But of all wisdom be thou precedent,
 O soueraigne Queene, whose prayse I would endite,
 Endite I would as dewtie doth excite;
 But ah my rimes too rude and rugged arre,
 When in so high an obiect they do lite,
 And striuing, fit to make, I feare do marre:
 Thy selfe thy prayses tell, and make them knowen farre.

puissaunce: power precedent: model endite: proclaim

She traueilling with *Guyon* by the way,
 Of sundry things faire purpose gan to find,
 T'abridg their iourney long, and lingring day;
 Mongst which it fell into that Faeries mind,
 To aske this Briton Mayd, what vncouth wind,
 Brought her into those parts, and what inquest
 Made her dissemble her disguised kind:
 Faire Lady she him seemd, like Lady drest,
 But fairest knight aliue, when armed was her brest.

Line 1: Apparently a mistake – It's really Red Cross.
 sundry: various purpose: conversation t'abridge: to shorten
 inquest: quest, mission kind: nature

Thereat she sighing softly, had no powre
 To speake a while, ne ready answeere make,
 But with hart-thrilling throbs and bitter stowre,
 As if she had a feuer fit, did quake,
 And euery daintie limbe with horroure shake;
 And euer and anone the rosy red,
 Flasht through her face, as it had been a flake
 Of lightning, through bright heauen fulmined;
 At last the passion past she thus him answered.

stowre: agitation flake: flash fulmined: shot forth

Faire Sir, I let you weete, that from the howre
 I taken was from nurses tender pap,
 I haue beene trained vp in warlike stowre,
 To tossen speare and shield, and to affrap
 The warlike ryder to his most mishap;
 Sithence I loathed haue my life to lead,
 As Ladies wont, in pleasures wanton lap,
 To finger the fine needle and nyce thread;
 Me leuer were with point of foemans speare be dead.

weete: know pap: breast stowre: combat affrap: strike
 sithence: since then wont: are accustomed to
 Me leuer were: I'd rather foeman: enemy

All my delight on deedes of armes is set,
 To hunt out perils and aduentures hard,
 By sea, by land, where so they may be met,
 Onely for honour and for high regard,
 Without respect of riches or reward.
 For such intent into these parts I came,
 Withouten compasse, or withouten card,
 Far fro my natiue soyle, that is by name
 The greater *Britaine*, here to seeke for prayse and fame.

respect: care card: map fro: from

Fame blazed hath, that here in Faery lond
 Do many famous Knightes and Ladies wonne,
 And many straunge aduentures to be fond,
 Of which great worth and worship may be wonne;
 Which I to proue, this voyage haue begonne.
 But mote I weete of you, right curteous knight,
 Tydings of one, that hath vnto me donne
 Late foule dishonour and reprochfull spight,
 The which I seeke to wreake, and *Arthegall* he hight.

Fame blazed hath: Rumor has proclaimed wonne: live
 mote I weete: might I know tydings: news wreake: avenge
Arthegall, whose name means Arthur's equal, is the destined mate of
 Britomart and, as the hero of Book 5 of *Faerie Queene*, represents Justice.

The word gone out, she backe againe would call,
 As her repenting so to haue missayd,
 But that he it vp-taking ere the fall,
 Her shortly answered; Faire martiall Mayd
 Certes ye misauised beene, t'vpbrayd
 A gentle knight with so vnknightly blame:
 For weet ye well of all, that euer playd
 At tilt or tourney, or like warlike game,
 The noble *Arthegall* hath euer borne the name.

ere: before martiall: warlike certes: certainly t'vpbrayd:
 to reproach, censure weet: know tilt or tourney: jousting

10

For thy great wonder were it, if such shame
 Should euer enter in his bounteous thought,
 Or euer do, that mote deseruen blame:
 The noble courage neuer weeneth ought,
 That may vnworthy of it selfe be thought.
 Therefore, faire Damzell, be ye well aware,
 Least that too farre ye haue your sorrow sought:
 You and your countrey both I wish welfare,
 And honour both; for each of other worthy are.

For thy: therefore bounteous: virtuous mote: might
 courage: spirit weeneth ought: thinks anything aware: wary

11

The royall Mayd woxe inly wondrous glad,
 To heare her Loue so highly magnifide,
 And ioyd that euer she affixed had,
 Her hart on knight so goodly glorifide,
 How euer finely she it faind to hide:
 The louing mother, that nine monethes did beare,
 In the deare closet of her painefull side,
 Her tender babe, it seeing safe appeare,
 Doth not so much reioyce, as she reioyced theare.

woxe: grew faind: was eager to

12

But to occasion him to further talke,
 To feed her humour with his pleasing stile,
 Her list in strifull termes with him to balke,
 And thus replide, How euer, Sir, ye file
 Your curteous tongue, his prayses to compile,
 It ill beseemes a knight of gentle sort,
 Such as ye haue him boasted, to beguile
 A simple mayd, and worke so haynous tort,
 In shame of knighthood, as I largely can report.

occasion: induce humour: mood her list: she wanted
 balke: dispute file / Your curteous tongue: smooth-talk
 beguile: trick haynous tort: heinous wrong largely: at length

Let be therefore my vengeaunce to disswade,
 And read, where I that faytour false may find.
 Ah, but if reason faire might you perswade,
 To slake your wrath, and mollifie your mind,
 (Said he) perhaps ye should it better find:
 For hardy thing it is, to weene by might,
 That man to hard conditions to bind,
 Or euer hope to match in equall fight,
 Whose prowesse paragon saw neuer liuing wight.

Let be: Cease read: tell me faytour: villain slake your wrath:
 lessen your anger hardy: foolhardy weene: expect
 whose prowess paragon: the equal of whose prowess wight: person

14

Ne soothlich is it easie for to read,
 Where now on earth, or how he may be found;
 For he ne wonneth in one certaine stead,
 But restlesse walketh all the world around,
 Ay doing things, that to his fame redound,
 Defending Ladies cause, and Orphans right,
 Where so he heares, that any doth confound
 Them comfortlesse, through tyranny or might:
 So is his soueraine honour raisde to heauens hight.

soothlich: truly read: know wonneth: lives stead: place ay: always
 that to his fame redound: tht add to his reputation confound: persecute

15

His feeling words her feeble sence much pleased,
 And softly sunck into her molten hart;
 Hart that is inly hurt, is greatly eased
 With hope of thing, that may allegge his smart;
 For pleasing words are like to Magick art,
 That doth the charmed Snake in slomber lay:
 Such secret ease felt gentle *Britomart*,
 Yet list the same efforce with faind gainesay;
 So dischord oft in Musick makes the sweeter lay.

molten: melting alleggee his smart: alleviate its pain line 8: Yet was
 pleased to intensify that sensation by pretending to disagree. lay: song

16

And said, Sir knight, these idle termes forbear,
 And sith it is vneath to find his haunt,
 Tell me some markes, by which he may appeare,
 If chaunce I him encounter parauaunt;
 For perdie one shall other slay, or daunt:
 What shape, what shield, what armes, what steed, what sted,
 And what so else his person most may vaunt?
 All which the *Redcrosse* knight to point ared,
 And him in euery part before her fashioned.

forbear: refrain from sith: since vneath: difficult haunt: abode
 parauaunt: face-to-face perdie:truly daunt: dismay
 sted: station, place, situation to point ared: described exactly

Yet him in euery part before she knew,
 How euer list her now her knowledge faine,
 Sith him whilome in *Britaine* she did vew,
 To her reuealed in a mirrhour plaine,
 Whereof did grow her first engrafted paine;
 Whose root and stalke so bitter yet did tast,
 That but the fruit more sweetnesse did containe,
 Her wretched dayes in dolour she mote wast,
 And yield the pray of loue to lothsome death at last.

Line 2: However her eager knowledge pleased her now
 sith: since whilome: formerly mirrhour: glass sphere
 dolour: sadness mote: might

By strange occasion she did him behold,
 And much more strangely gan to loue his sight,
 As it in bookes hath written bene of old.
 In *Deheubarth* that now South-wales is hight,
 What time king *Ryence* raig'n'd, and dealed right,
 The great Magitian *Merlin* had deuiz'd,
 By his deepe science, and hell-dreaded might,
 A looking glasse, right wondrously aguiz'd,
 Whose vertues through the wyde world soone were solemniz'd.

gan: began hight: called aguiz'd: made, fashioned vertues: powers

It vertue had, to shew in perfect sight,
 What euer thing was in the world contaynd,
 Betwixt the lowest earth and heauens hight,
 So that it to the looker appertaynd;
 What euer foe had wrought, or frend had faynd,
 Therein discouered was, ne ought mote pas,
 Ne ought in secret from the same remaynd;
 For thy it round and hollow shaped was,
 Like to the world it selfe, and seem'd a world of glas.

vertue: power appertaynd: pertained faynd: pretended
 ne ought mote pas: nothing might pass For thy: because

Who wonders not, that reades so wonderous worke?
 But who does wonder, that has red the Towre,
 Wherein th'*Ægyptian Phao* long did lurke
 From all mens vew, that none might her discoure,
 Yet she might all men vew out of her bowre?
 Great *Ptolomæe* it for his lemans sake
 Ybuilded all of glasse, by Magicke powre,
 And also it impregnable did make;
 Yet when his loue was false, he with a peaze it brake.

bowre: bedroom leman: mistress peaze: blow

Such was the glassie globe that *Merlin* made,
 And gaue vnto king *Ryence* for his gard,
 That neuer foes his kingdome might inuade,
 But he it knew at home before he hard
 Tydings thereof, and so them still debar'd.
 It was a famous Present for a Prince,
 And worthy worke of infinite reward,
 That treasons could bewray, and foes conuince;
 Happie this Realme, had it remained euer since.

hard / Tydings: Heard news bewray: reveal

One day it fortun'd, faire *Britomart*
 Into her fathers closet to repayre;
 For nothing he from her reseru'd apart,
 Being his onely daughter and his hayre;
 Where when she had espyde that mirrhour fayre,
 Her selfe a while therein she vewd in vaine;
 Tho her auizing of the vertues rare,
 Which thereof spoken were, she gan againe
 Her to bethinke of, that mote to her selfe pertaine.

hayre: heir Tho: Then auizing: considering

But as it falleth, in the gentlest harts
 Imperious Loue hath highest set his throne,
 And tyrannizeth in the bitter smarts
 Of them, that to him buxome are and prone:
 So thought this Mayd (as maydens vse to done)
 Whom fortune for her husband would allot,
 Not that she lusted after any one;
 For she was pure from blame of sinfull blot,
 Yet wist her life at last must lincke in that same knot.

smarts: pains buxome: obedient, yielding wist: wished

Eftsoones there was presented to her eye
 A comely knight, all arm'd in complete wize,
 Through whose bright ventayle lifted vp on hye
 His manly face, that did his foes agrize,
 And friends to termes of gentle truce entize,
 Lookt foorth, as *Phoebus* face out of the east,
 Betwixt two shadie mountaines doth arize;
 Portly his person was, and much increast
 Through his Heroicke grace, and honorable gest.

Eftsoones: Soon comely: handsome ventayle: visor of helmet
 agrize: terrify Phoebus face: the sun gest: bearing, deportment

His crest was couered with a couchant Hound,
 And all his armour seem'd of antique mould,
 But wondrous massie and assured sound,
 And round about yfretted all with gold,
 In which there written was with cyphers old,
Achilles armes, which Arthegall did win.
 And on his shield enueloped seuenfold
 He bore a crowned litle Ermilin,
 That deckt the azure field with her faire pouldred skin.

yfretted: adorned ciphers: letters Ermilin: ermine, emblem of
 royalty and chastity pouldred: spotted

The Damzell well did vew his personage,
 And liked well, ne further fastned not,
 But went her way; ne her vnguilty age
 Did weene, vnwares, that her vnlucky lot
 Lay hidden in the bottome of the pot;
 Of hurt vnwist most daunger doth rebound:
 But the false Archer, which that arrow shot
 So slyly, that she did not feele the wound,
 Did smyle full smoothly at her weetlesse wofull stound.

weene: suppose, think lot: fate, type of life line 6: Most
 danger results from unknown hurt. the false Archer: Cupid
 her weetlesse wofull stound: her unconscious sorrowful trouble

Thenceforth the feather in her loftie crest,
 Ruffed of loue, gan lowly to auaille,
 And her proud portance, and her princely gest,
 With which she earst triumphed, now did quail.
 Sad, solemne, sowre, and full of fancies fraile
 She woxe; yet wist she neither how, nor why,
 She wist not, silly Mayd, what she did aile,
 Yet wist, she was not well at ease perdy,
 Yet thought it was not loue, but some melancholy.

quaille: sink portance, gest: demeanor, bearing earst: earlier
 fancies: imaginations woxe: became wist: knew perdy: truly

So soone as Night had with her pallid hew
 Defast the beautie of the shining sky,
 And reft from men the worlds desired vew,
 She with her Nourse adowne to sleepe did lye;
 But sleepe full farre away from her did fly:
 In stead thereof sad sighes, and sorrowes deepe
 Kept watch and ward about her warily,
 That nought she did but wayle, and often steepe
 Her daintie couch with teares, which closely she did weepe.

pallid hew: pale color reft: took away
 wayle: sob, cry steepe: soak

And if that any drop of slombring rest
 Did chaunce to still into her wearie spright,
 When feeble nature felt her selfe opprest,
 Streight way with dreames, and with fantasticke sight
 Of dreadfull things the same was put to flight,
 That oft out of her bed she did astart,
 As one with vew of ghastly feends affright:
 Tho gan she to renew her former smart,
 And thinke of that faire visage, written in her hart.

still: stead spright: spirit Tho gan she: Then she began
 smart: pain visage: face

One night, when she was tost with such vnrest,
 Her aged Nurse, whose name was *Glauce* hight,
 Feeling her leape out of her loathed nest,
 Betwixt her feeble armes her quickly keight,
 And downe againe in her warme bed her dight;
 Ah my deare daughter, ah my dearest dread,
 What vncouth fit (said she) what euill plight
 Hath thee opprest, and with sad drearyhead
 Chaunged thy liuely cheare, and liuing made thee dead?

hight: called keight: caught dight: placed dread: mistress,
 princess plight: condition cheare: visage, countenance, face

For not of nought these suddeine ghastly feares
 All night afflict thy naturall repose,
 And all the day, when as thine equall peares,
 Their fit disports with faire delight doe chose,
 Thou in dull corners doest thy selfe inclose,
 Ne tastest Princes pleasures, ne doest spred
 Abroad thy fresh youthes fairest flowre, but lose
 Both leafe and fruit, both too vntimely shed,
 As one in wilfull bale for euer buried.

nought: nothing peares: peers, companions
 fit disports: appropriate activities bale: grief

The time, that mortall men their weary cares
 Do lay away, and all wilde beastes do rest,
 And euery riuier eke his course forbeares
 Then doth this wicked euill thee infest,
 And riue with thousand throbs thy thrilled brest;
 Like an huge *Aetn'* of deepe engulfed grieffe,
 Sorrow is heaped in thy hollow chest,
 Whence forth it breakes in sighes and anguish rife,
 As smoke and sulphure mingled with confused strife.

eke: also rive: split, tear Aetna: volcano in Sicily
 rife: abundant strife: tumult, agitation

Aye me, how much I feare, least loue it bee;
 But if that loue it be, as sure I read
 By knowen signes and passions, which I see,
 Be it worthy of thy race and royall sead,
 Then I auow by this most sacred head
 Of my deare foster child, to ease thy grieffe,
 And win thy will: Therefore away doe dread;
 For death nor daunger from thy dew reliefe
 Shall me debarre, tell me therefore my liefest liefe.

least: lest, for fear that read: perceive, know avow: swear
 debarre: prevent my liefest liefe: my dearest darling

So hauing said, her twixt her armes twaine
 She straightly straynd, and colled tenderly,
 And euery trembling ioynt, and euery vaine
 She softly felt, and rubbed busily,
 To doe the frosen cold away to fly;
 And her faire deawy eies with kisses deare
 She oft did bath, and oft againe did dry;
 And euer her importund, not to feare
 To let the secret of her hart to her appeare.

twixt her armes twaine: between her two arms
 colled: hugged importuned: pleaded with

The Damzell pauzd, and then thus fearefully;
 Ah Nurse, what needeth thee to eke my paine?
 Is not enough, that I alone doe dye,
 But it must doubled be with death of twaine?
 For nought for me but death there doth remaine.
 O daughter deare (said she) despaire no whit;
 For neuer sore, but might a salue obtaine:
 That blinded God, which hath ye blindly smit,
 Another arrow hath your louers hart to hit.

eke: add to whit: bit smit: hit (with an arrow)

But mine is not (quoth she) like others wound;
 For which no reason can find remedy.
 Was neuer such, but mote the like be found,
 (Said she) and though no reason may apply
 Salue to your sore, yet loue can higher stye,
 Then reasons reach, and oft hath wonders donne.
 But neither God of loue, nor God of sky
 Can doe (said she) that, which cannot be donne.
 Things oft impossible (quoth she) seeme, ere begonne.

quoth: said mote: might stye: mount, exceed
 ere begonne: before begun

These idle words (said she) doe nought asswage
 My stubborne smart, but more annoyance breed,
 For no no vsuall fire, no vsuall rage
 It is, ô Nurse, which on my life doth feed,
 And suckes the bloud, which from my hart doth bleed.
 But since thy faithfull zeale lets me not hyde
 My crime, (if crime it be) I will it reed.
 Nor Prince, nor pere it is, whose loue hath gryde
 My feeble brest of late, and launched this wound wyde.

doe nought asswage / My stubborn smart: don't relieve my
 unrelenting pain zeale: passion reed: declare
 pere: peer, companion gryde: pierced

Nor man it is, nor other liuing wight;
 For then some hope I might vnto me draw,
 But th'only shade and semblant of a knight,
 Whose shape or person yet I neuer saw,
 Hath me subiected to loues cruell law:
 The same one day, as me misfortune led,
 I in my fathers wondrous mirrhour saw,
 And pleased with that seeming goodly-hed,
 Vnwares the hidden hooke with baite I swallowed.

wight: person goodly-hed: godlike appearance

Sithens it hath infixed faster hold
 Within my bleeding bowels, and so sore
 Now ranckleth in this same fraile fleshly mould,
 That all mine entrailes flow with poysnous gore,
 And th'vicer groweth daily more and more;
 Ne can my running sore find remedie,
 Other then my hard fortune to deplore,
 And languish as the leafe falne from the tree,
 Till death make one end of my dayes and miserie.

Sithens: since entrailes: innards deplore: regret strongly

Daughter (said she) what need ye be dismayd,
 Or why make ye such Monster of your mind?
 Of much more vncouth thing I was affrayd;
 Of filthy lust, contrarie vnto kind:
 But this affection nothing straunge I find;
 For who with reason can you aye reprove,
 To loue the semblant pleasing most your mind,
 And yield your heart, whence ye cannot remoue?
 No guilt in you, but in the tyranny of loue.

aye reprove: ever criticize, chastise
 semblant: likeness, appearance

Not so th'*Arabian Myrrhe* did set her mind;
 Nor so did *Biblis* spend her pining hart,
 But lou'd their natiue flesh against all kind,
 And to their purpose vsed wicked art:
 Yet playd *Pasiphaë* a more monstrous part,
 That lou'd a Bull, and learn'd a beast to bee;
 Such shamefull lusts who loaths not, which depart
 From course of nature and of modestie?
 Sweet loue such lewdnes bands from his faire companie.

Myrrhe (mother of Adonis) committed incest with her father, Biblis fell in love with her brother, and Pasiphae's love of a bull led to the birth of the Minotaur – all from Ovid. bands: banishes

But thine my Deare (welfare thy heart my deare)
 Though strange beginning had, yet fixed is
 On one, that worthy may perhaps appeare;
 And certes seemes bestowed not amis:
 Ioy thereof haue thou and eternall blis.
 With that vpleaning on her elbow weake,
 Her alablaster brest she soft did kis,
 Which all that while she felt to pant and quake,
 As it an Earth-quake were; at last she thus bespake.

certes: certainly amis: wrongfully alabaster: white marble

Beldame, your words doe worke me litle ease;
 For though my loue be not so lewdly bent,
 As those ye blame, yet may it nought appease
 My raging smart, ne ought my flame relent,
 But rather doth my helpelesse grieffe augment.
 For they, how euer shamefull and vnkind,
 Yet did possesse their horrible intent:
 Short end of sorrowes they thereby did find;
 So was their fortune good, though wicked were their mind.

Beldame: Old woman smart: pain

But wicked fortune mine, though mind be good,
 Can haue no end, nor hope of my desire,
 But feed on shadowes, whiles I die for food,
 And like a shadow wexe, whiles with entire
 Affection, I doe languish and expire.
 I fonder, then *Cephisus* foolish child,
 Who hauing vewed in a fountaine shere
 His face, was with the loue thereof beguild;
 I fonder loue a shade, the bodie farre exild.

wexe: grow, increase fonder: more foolish Cephisus: Narcissus, who fell in love with his own reflection, deluded by shadows.

Nought like (quoth she) for that same wretched boy
 Was of himselfe the idle Paramoure;
 Both loue and louer, without hope of ioy,
 For which he faded to a watry flowre.
 But better fortune thine, and better howre,
 Which lou'st the shadow of a warlike knight;
 No shadow, but a bodie hath in powre:
 That bodie, wheresoeuer that it light,
 May learned be by cyphers, or by Magicke might.

Paramoure: lover ciphers: letters

But if thou may with reason yet repress
 The growing euill, ere it strength haue got,
 And thee abandond wholly doe possesse,
 Against it strongly striue, and yield thee not,
 Till thou in open field adowne be smot.
 But if the passion mayster thy fraile might,
 So that needs loue or death must be thy lot,
 Then I auow to thee, by wrong or right
 To compasse thy desire, and find that loued knight.

ere: befoe strive: fight smot: knocked, hit
 mayster: take control of frail: weak

Her chearefull words much cheard the feeble spright
 Of the sicke virgin, that her downe she layd
 In her warme bed to sleepe, if that she might;
 And the old-woman carefully displayd
 The clothes about her round with busie ayd;
 So that at last a little creeping sleepe
 Surprisd her sense: she therewith well apayd,
 The drunken lampe downe in the oyle did steepe,
 And set her by to watch, and set her by to weepe.

Apayd: pleased, satisfied line 8: She extinguishes the lamp.

Earely the morrow next, before that day
 His ioyous face did to the world reueale,
 They both vprose and tooke their readie way
 Vnto the Church, their prayers to appeale,
 With great deuotion, and with litle zeale:
 For the faire Damzell from the holy herse
 Her loue-sicke hart to other thoughts did steale;
 And that old Dame said many an idle verse,
 Out of her daughters hart fond fancies to reuerse.

herse: ceremony

Returned home, the royall Infant fell
 Into her former fit; for why, no powre
 Nor guidance of her selfe in her did dwell.
 But th'aged Nurse her calling to her bowre,
 Had gathered Rew, and Sauine, and the flowre
 Of *Camphara*, and Calamint, and Dill,
 All which she in a earthen Pot did poure,
 And to the brim with Colt wood did it fill,
 And many drops of milke and bloud through it did spill.

for why: because bowre: bedroom

50

Then taking thrise three haire from off her head,
 Them trebly breaded in a threefold lace,
 And round about the pots mouth, bound the thread,
 And after hauing whispered a space
 Certaine sad words, with hollow voice and bace,
 She to the virgin said, thrise said she it;
 Come daughter come, come; spit vpon my face,
 Spit thrise vpon me, thrise vpon me spit;
 Th'vneuen number for this businesse is most fit.

thrise: three times base: low fit: appropriate

51

That sayd, her round about she from her turnd,
 She turned her contrarie to the Sunne,
 Thrise she her turnd contrary, and returnd,
 All contrary, for she the right did shunne,
 And euer what she did, was streight vndonne.
 So thought she to vndoe her daughters loue:
 But loue, that is in gentle brest begonne,
 No idle charmes so lightly may remoue,
 That well can wisse, who by triall it does proue.

shunne: avoid

52

Ne ought it mote the noble Mayd auayle,
 Ne slake the furie of her cruell flame,
 But that she still did waste, and still did wayle,
 That through long languour, and hart-burning brame
 She shortly like a pyned ghost became,
 Which long hath waited by the Stygian strond.
 That when old *Glauce* saw, for feare least blame
 Of her miscarriage should in her be fond,
 She wist not how t'amend, nor how it to withstond.

mote...auayle: might help slake: lessen, abate brame: sharp passion
 pyned: tormented Stygian strond: banks of the River Styx (across
 which is the Underworld of death) wist: know

Cant. III.

*Merlin bewrayes to Britomart,
 the state of Artegall.
 And shewes the famous Progeny
 which from them springen shall.*

bewrays: reveals

1

Most sacred fire, that burnest mightily
 In liuing brests, ykindled first aboue,
 Emongst th'eternall spheres and lamping sky,
 And thence poured into men, which men call Loue;
 Not that same, which doth base affections moue
 In brutish minds, and filthy lust inflame,
 But that sweet fit, that doth true beautie loue,
 And choseth vertue for his dearest Dame,
 Whence spring all noble deeds and neuer dying fame:

Ykindled: kindled, started

2

Well did Antiquitie a God thee deeme,
 That ouer mortall minds hast so great might,
 To order them, as best to thee doth seeme,
 And all their actions to direct aright;
 The fatall purpose of diuine foresight,
 Thou doest effect in destined descents,
 Through deepe impression of thy secret might,
 And stirredst vp th'Heroes high intents,
 Which the late world admyres for wondrous monuments.

destined descents: fated lineages monuments: memorials

3

But thy dread darts in none doe triumph more,
 Ne brauer prooue in any, of thy powre
 Shew'dst thou, then in this royall Maid of yore,
 Making her seeke an vnknowne Paramoure,
 From the worlds end, through many a bitter stowre:
 From whose two loynes thou afterwards did rayse
 Most famous fruits of matrimoniall bowre,
 Which through the earth haue spread their liuing prayse,
 That fame in trompe of gold eternally displayes.

braver: finer yore: the past Paramoure: lover
 stowre: encounter bowre: bedroom trompe: trumpet

Begin then, ô my dearest sacred Dame,
 Daughter of *Phoebus* and of *Memorie*,
 That doest ennoble with immortall name
 The warlike Worthies, from antiquitie,
 In thy great volume of Eternitie:
 Begin, ô *Clio*, and recount from hence
 My glorious Soueraines goodly auncestrie,
 Till that by dew degrees and long pretence,
 Thou haue it lastly brought vnto her Excellence.

it: Elizabeth I's genealogy (the poem) *Clio*: Muse of history

Full many wayes within her troubled mind,
 Old *Glauce* cast, to cure this Ladies grieffe:
 Full many waies she sought, but none could find,
 Nor herbes, nor charmes, nor counsell, that is chiefe
 And choisest med'cine for sicke harts reliefe:
 For thy great care she tooke, and greater feare,
 Least that it should her turne to foule reprehensive,
 And sore reproch, when so her father deare
 Should of his dearest daughters hard misfortune heare.

For thy great care she tooke: Therefore she was much troubled
 reprehensive: reproof

At last she her auisid, that he, which made
 That mirrhour, wherein the sicke Damosell
 So straungely vewed her straunge louers shade,
 To weet, the learned *Merlin*, well could tell,
 Vnder what coast of heauen the man did dwell,
 And by what meanes his loue might best be wrought:
 For though beyond the *Africk Ismaell*,
 Or th'Indian *Peru* he were, she thought
 Him forth through infinite endeouour to haue sought.

auisid: recalled to weet: that is, to wit

Forthwith themselues disguising both in straunge
 And base attyre, that none might them bewray,
 To *Maridunum*, that is now by chaunge
 Of name *Cayr-Merlin* cald, they tooke their way:
 There the wise *Merlin* whylome wont (they say)
 To make his wonne, low vnderneath the ground,
 In a deepe delue, farre from the vew of day,
 That of no liuing wight he mote be found,
 When so he counsell with his sprights encōpast round.

bewray: reveal, betray *Cayr-Merlin*: *Carmarthen* whylome
 wont... / To make his wonne: formerly was accustomed to dwell
 delue: valley wight: person mote: might with his spirits
 encompassed round: surrounded by his spirits

And if thou euer happen that same way
 To trauell, goe to see that dreadfull place:
 It is an hideous hollow caue (they say)
 Vnder a rocke that lyes a little space
 From the swift *Barry*, tomling downe apace,
 Emongst the woodie hilles of *Dyneuowre*:
 But dare thou not, I charge, in any cace,
 To enter into that same balefull Bowre,
 For fear the cruell Feends should thee vnwares deuowre.

Barry: a river in Wales baleful Bower: deadly bedroom

But standing high aloft, low lay thine eare,
 And there such ghastly noise of yron chaines,
 And brasen Caudrons thou shalt rombling heare,
 Which thousand sprights with long enduring paines
 Doe tosse, that it will stonne thy feeble braines,
 And oftentimes great grones, and grievous stounds,
 When too huge toile and labour them constraines:
 And oftentimes loud strokes, and ringing sounds
 From vnder that deepe Rocke most horribly rebounds.

rebounds: echoes

The cause some say is this: A litle while
 Before that *Merlin* dyde, he did intend,
 A brasen wall in compas to compile
 About *Cairmardin*, and did it commend
 Vnto these Sprights, to bring to perfect end.
 During which worke the Ladie of the Lake,
 Whom long he lou'd, for him in hast did send,
 Who thereby forst his workemen to forsake,
 Them bound till his returne, their labour not to slake.

brazen: brass slake: diminish

In the meane time through that false Ladies traine,
 He was surprisd, and buried vnder beare,
 Ne euer to his worke returnd againe:
 Nath'lesse those feends may not their worke forbear,
 So greatly his commaundement they feare,
 But there doe toyle and trauell day and night,
 Vntill that brasen wall they vp doe reare:
 For *Merlin* had in Magicke more insight,
 Then euer him before or after liuing wight.

traine: trickery beare: bier, tomb forbear: cease
 trauell: travail, work brazen: brass wight: person

For he by words could call out of the sky
 Both Sunne and Moone, and make them him obay:
 The land to sea, and sea to mainland dry,
 And darkesome night he eke could turne to day:
 Huge hostes of men he could alone dismay,
 And hostes of men of meanest things could frame,
 When so him list his enimies to fray:
 That to this day for terror of his fame,
 The feends do quake, when any him to them does name.

eke: also frame: create list: wish to fray: to scare

And sooth, men say that he was not the sonne
 Of mortall Syre, or other liuing wight,
 But wondrously begotten, and begonne
 By false illusion of a guilefull Spright,
 On a faire Ladie Nonne, that whilome hight
Matilda, daughter to *Pubidius*,
 Who was the Lord of *Mathraual* by right,
 And coosen vnto king *Ambrosius*:
 Whence he indued was with skill so maruellous.

sooth: truly *Mathraual*: Powys, a castle in Wales
 coosen: cousin *Ambrosius*: Uther's brother indued: endowed

They here ariuing, staid a while without,
 Ne durst aduenture rashly in to wend,
 But of their first intent gan make new dout
 For dread of daunger, which it might portend:
 Vntill the hardie Mayd (with loue to frend)
 First entering, the dreadfull Mage there found
 Deepe busied bout worke of wondrous end,
 And writing strange characters in the ground,
 With which the stubborn feends he to his seruice bound.

durst: dared wend: go hardie: bold Mage: Magician

He nought was moued at their entrance bold:
 For of their comming well he wist afore,
 Yet list them bid their businesse to vnfold,
 As if ought in this world in secret store
 Were from him hidden, or vnknowne of yore.
 Then *Glauce* thus, Let not it thee offend,
 That we thus rashly through thy darkesome dore,
 Vnwares haue prest: for either fatall end,
 Or other mightie cause vs two did hither send.

wist: knew list: desired yore: the past
 fatall end: purpose ordained by fate hither: here

He bad tell on; and then she thus began.
 Now haue three Moones with borrow'd brothers light,
 Thrice shined faire, and thrice seem'd dim and wan,
 Sith a sore euill, which this virgin bright
 Tormenteth, and doth plunge in dolefull plight,
 First rooting tooke; but what thing it mote bee,
 Or whence it sprong, I cannot read aright:
 But this I read, that but if remedee
 Thou her afford, full shortly I her dead shall see.

bad: said thrice: three times sith: since
 doleful plight: sorrow read: discover, perceive

Therewith th'Enchaunter softly gan to smyle
 At her smooth speeches, weeting inly well,
 That she to him dissembled womanish guyle,
 And to her said, Beldame, by that ye tell,
 More need of leach-craft hath your Damozell,
 Then of my skill: who helpe may haue elsewhere,
 In vaine seekes wonders out of Magicke spell.
 Th'old woman wox half blanck, those words to heare;
 And yet was loth to let her purpose plaine appeare.

weeting inly: knowing inwardly dissembled womanish guile:
 pretended using female trickery Beldame: old woman
 leach-craft: medicine Damozell: young woman
 wox half blanck: turned pale loth: reluctant

And to him said, If any leaches skill,
 Or other learned meanes could haue redrest
 This my deare daughters deepe engrafted ill,
 Certes I should be loth thee to molest:
 But this sad euill, which doth her infest,
 Doth course of naturall cause farre exceed,
 And housed is within her hollow brest,
 That either seemes some cursed witches deed,
 Or euill spright, that in her doth such torment breed.

leaches: doctor's redrest: cured engrafted: implanted
 Certes: certainly loth: reluctant

The wisard could no lenger beare her bord,
 But brusting forth in laughter, to her sayd;
Glauce, what needs this colourable word,
 To cloke the cause, that hath it selfe bewrayd?
 Ne ye faire *Britomartis*, thus arayd,
 More hidden are, then Sunne in cloudy vele;
 Whom thy good fortune, hauing fate obayd,
 Hath hither brought, for succour to appele;
 The which the powres to thee are pleased to reuele.

bord: talk Ne ye: Nor you for succour to appele: to ask for help

The doubtfull Mayd, seeing her selfe descryde,
 Was all abasht, and her pure yuory
 Into a cleare Carnation suddeine dyde;
 As faire *Aurora* rising hastily,
 Doth by her blushing tell, that she did lye
 All night in old *Tithonus* frozen bed,
 Whereof she seemes ashamed inwardly.
 But her old Nourse was nought dishartened,
 But vantage made of that, which *Merlin* had ared.

descryde: perceived abasht: embarrassed
 Aurora: goddess of the Dawn ared: said

And sayd, Sith then thou knowest all our grieffe,
 (For what doest not thou know?) of grace I pray,
 Pitty our plaint, and yield vs meet reliefe.
 With that the Prophet still awhile did stay,
 And then his spirite thus gan forth display;
 Most noble Virgin, that by fatall lore
 Hast learn'd to loue, let no whit thee dismay
 The hard begin, that meets thee in the dore,
 And with sharpe fits thy tender hart oppresseth sore.

meet: appropriate display: show
 fatall lore: fated knowledge whit: little bit

For so must all things excellent begin,
 And eke enrooted deepe must be that Tree,
 Whose big embodied braunches shall not lin,
 Till they to heauens hight forth stretched bee.
 For from thy wombe a famous Progenie
 Shall spring, out of the auncient *Troian* blood,
 Which shall reuiue the sleeping memorie
 Of those same antique Peres, the heauens brood,
 Which *Greece* and *Asian* riuers stained with their blood.

eke: also Tree: Britomart's family tree, ending in Elizabeth I
 lin: cease Peres: champions

Renowmed kings, and sacred Emperours,
 Thy fruitfull Ofspring, shall from thee descend;
 Braue Captaines, and most mighty wariours,
 That shall their conquests through all lands extend,
 And their decayed kingdomes shall amend:
 The feeble Britons, broken with long warre,
 They shall vpreare, and mightily defend
 Against their forrein foe, that comes from farre,
 Till vniuersall peace compound all ciuill iarre.

amend: restore

It was not, *Britomart*, thy wandring eye,
 Glauncing vnwares in charmed looking glas,
 But the streight course of heauenly destiny,
 Led with eternall prouidence, that has
 Guided thy glaunce, to bring his will to pas:
 Ne is thy fate, ne is thy fortune ill,
 To loue the prowest knight, that euer was.
 Therefore submit thy wayes vnto his will,
 And do by all dew meanes thy destiny fulfill.

Straight: strict prowest: bravest

But read (said *Glauce*) thou Magitian
 What meanes shall she out seeke, or what wayes take?
 How shall she know, how shall she find the man?
 Or what needs her to toyle, sith fates can make
 Way for themselues, their purpose to partake?
 Then *Merlin* thus; Indeed the fates are firme,
 And may not shrinck, though all the world do shake:
 Yet ought mens good endeouours them confirme,
 And guide the heavenly causes to their constant terme.

read: tell sith: since partake: accomplish
 Merlin speaks from stanza 25 to 50. The information comes from
 Holinshed and Geoffrey of Monmouth.

The man whom heauens haue ordaynd to bee
 The spouse of *Britomart*, is *Arthegall*:
 He wonneth in the land of *Fayeree*,
 Yet is no *Fary* borne, ne sib at all
 To Elfes, but sprong of seed terrestriall,
 And whilome by false *Faries* stolne away,
 Whiles yet in infant cradle he did crall;
 Ne other to himselfe is knowne this day,
 But that he by an Elfe was gotten of a *Fay*.

wonneth: lives sib: sibling
 whilome: formerly was gotten: begot

But sooth he is the sonne of *Gorlois*,
 And brother vnto *Cador* Cornish king,
 And for his warlike feates renowmed is,
 From where the day out of the sea doth spring,
 Vntill the closure of the Euening.
 From thence, him firmly bound with faithfull band,
 To this his natiue soyle thou backe shalt bring,
 Strongly to aide his countrey, to withstand
 The powre of forrein Paynims, which inuade thy land.

sooth: truth Paynims: pagans

Great aid thereto his mighty puissaunce,
 And dreaded name shall giue in that sad day:
 Where also prooue of thy prow valiaunce
 Thou then shalt make, t'increase thy louers pray.
 Long time ye both in armes shall beare great sway,
 Till thy wombes burden thee from them do call,
 And his last fate him from thee take away,
 Too rathe cut off by practise criminall
 Of secret foes, that him shall make in mischiefe fall.

puissaunce: power prow valiaunce: courageous valor
 pray: prey rathe: soon

Where thee yet shall he leaue for memory
 Of his late puissaunce, his Image dead,
 That liuing him in all actiuiety
 To thee shall represent. He from the head
 Of his coosin *Constantius* without dread
 Shall take the crowne, that was his fathers right,
 And therewith crowne himselfe in th'others stead:
 Then shall he issew forth with dreadfull might,
 Against his Saxon foes in bloody field to fight.

his Image dead: his son

Like as a Lyon, that in drowsie caue
 Hath long time slept, himselfe so shall he shake,
 And comming forth, shall spred his banner braue
 Ouer the troubled South, that it shall make
 The warlike *Mertians* for feare to quake:
 Thrise shall he fight with them, and twice shall win,
 But the third time shall faire accordaunce make:
 And if he then with victorie can lin,
 He shall his dayes with peace bring to his earthly In.

accordaunce: agreement lin: cease In: dwelling

His sonne, hight *Vortipore*, shall him succede
 In kingdome, but not in felicity;
 Yet shall he long time warre with happy speed,
 And with great honour many battels try:
 But at the last to th'importunity
 Of froward fortune shall be forst to yield.
 But his sonne *Malgo* shall full mightily
 Auenge his fathers losse, with speare and shield,
 And his proud foes discomfit in victorious field.

hight: named felicity: happiness speed: success
 to th'importunity / Of forward fortune: to the urgings of perverse fortune

Behold the man, and tell me *Britomart*,
 If ay more goodly creature thou didst see;
 How like a Gyaunt in each manly part
 Beares he himselfe with portly maiestee,
 That one of th'old *Heroes* seemes to be:
 He the six Islands, comprouinciall
 In auncient times unto great Britaine,
 Shall to the same reduce, and to him call
 Their sundry kings to do their homage seuerall.

ay: ever reduce: restore sundry: various seuerall: diverse

All which his sonne *Careticus* awhile
 Shall well defend, and *Saxons* powre suppress,
 Vntill a straunger king from vnknowne soyle
 Arriuing, him with multitude oppresse;
 Great *Gormond*, hauing with huge mightnesse
 Ireland subdewd, and therein fixt his throne,
 Like a swift Otter, fell through emptinesse,
 Shall ouerswim the sea with many one
 Of his Norueyses, to assist the Britons fone.

fell through emptinesse: fierce because of hunger
 Norueyses: Norwegians fone: foes

He in his furie all shall ouerrunne,
 And holy Church with faithlesse hands deface,
 That thy sad people vtterly fordonne,
 Shall to the vtmost mountaines fly apace:
 Was neuer so great wast in any place,
 Nor so fowle outrage doen by liuing men:
 For all thy Cities they shall sacke and race,
 And the greene grasse, that groweth, they shall bren,
 That euen the wild beast shall dy in starued den.

fordonne: ruined wast: waste, destruction
 race: rage, destroy bren: burn

Whiles thus thy Britons do in languour pine,
 Proud *Etheldred* shall from the North arise,
 Seruing th'ambitious will of *Augustine*,
 And passing *Dee* with hardy enterprise,
 Shall backe repulse the valiaunt *Brockwell* twice,
 And *Bangor* with massacred Martyrs fill;
 But the third time shall rew his foolhardise:
 For *Cadwan* pitying his peoples ill,
 Shall stoutly him defeat, and thousand *Saxons* kill.

pine: sorrow rew his foolhardise: regret his folly

But after him, *Cadwallin* mightily
 On his sonne *Edwin* all those wrongs shall wreake;
 Ne shall auaille the wicked sorcery
 Of false *Pellite*, his purposes to breake,
 But him shall slay, and on a gallowes bleake
 Shall giue th'enchaunter his vnhappy hire;
 Then shall the Britons, late dismayd and weake,
 From their long vassalage gin to respire,
 And on their Paynim foes auenge their ranckled ire.

wreake: avenge hire: reward respire: rest
 Paynim: heathen, non-Christian ranckled ire: embittered anger

Ne shall he yet his wrath so mitigate,
 Till both the sonnes of *Edwin* he have slaine,
Offricke and *Osricke*, twinnes unfortunate,
 Both slaine in battell upon Layburne plaine,
 Together with the king of *Louthiane*,
 Hight *Adin*, and the king of *Orkeny*,
 Both ioynt partakers of the fatall paine:
 But *Penda*, fearefull of like desteny,
 Shall yield him selfe his liegeman, and swear fealty.

wrath: ire, anger fatall: fated fealty: loyalty

Him shall he make his fatall Instrument,
 T'afflict the other *Saxons* vnsubdewd;
 He marching forth with fury insolent
 Against the good king *Oswald*, who indewd
 With heauenly powre, and by Angels reskewd,
 All holding crosses in their hands on hye,
 Shall him defeate withouten bloud imbrewd:
 Of which, that field for endlesse memory,
 Shall *Heuenfield* be cald to all posterity.

Indewd: invented imbrewd: spilt

Where at *Cadwallin* wroth, shall forth issew,
 And an huge hoste into Northumber lead,
 With which he godly *Oswald* shall subdew,
 And crowne with martyrdom his sacred head.
 Whose brother *Oswin*, daunted with like dread,
 With price of siluer shall his kingdome buy,
 And *Penda*, seeking him adowne to tread,
 Shall tread adowne, and do him fowly dye,
 But shall with gifts his Lord *Cadwallin* pacify.

wroth: angry buy: ransom
 do him fowly dye: put him miserably to death

Then shall *Cadwallin* dye, and then the raine
 Of *Britons* eke with him attonce shall dye;
 Ne shall the good *Cadwallader* with paine,
 Or powre, be hable it to remedy,
 When the full time prefixt by destiny,
 Shalbe expird of *Britons* regiment.
 For heauen it selfe shall their successe enuy,
 And them with plagues and murrins pestilent
 Consume, till all their warlike puissaunce be spent.

eke: also regiment: rule murrains: diseases
 puissaunce: power

Yet after all these sorrowes, and huge hills
 Of dying people, during eight yeares space,
Cadwallader not yielding to his ills,
 From *Armoricke*, where long in wretched cace
 He liu'd, returning to his natue place,
 Shalbe by vision staid from his intent:
 For th'heauens haue decreed, to displace
 The *Britons*, for their sinnes dew punishment,
 And to the *Saxons* ouer-giue their gouernment.

Armorieke: Brittany case: state returning: expecting to return

Then woe, and woe, and euerlasting woe,
 Be to the Briton babe, that shalbe borne,
 To liue in thraldome of his fathers foe;
 Late King, now captiue, late Lord, now forlorne,
 The worlds reproch, the cruell victors scorne,
 Banisht from Princely bowre to wastfull wood:
 O who shall helpe me to lament, and mourne
 The royall seed, the antique *Troian* blood,
 Whose Empire lenger here, then ever any stood.

Line 1: See Rev. 8:13. Line 9 refers to the period from Brute
 (1132 B.C.) to the death of *Cadwallader* (690 CE).

The Damzell was full deepe empassioned,
 Both for his grieffe, and for her peoples sake,
 Whose future woes so plaine he fashioned,
 And sighing sore, at length him thus bespake;
 Ah but will heauens fury neuer slake,
 Nor vengeaunce huge relent it selfe at last?
 Will not long misery late mercy make,
 But shall their name for euer be defast,
 And quite from of th'earth their memory be rast?

slake: lessen late: at length rast: erased

Nay but the terme (said he) is limited,
 That in this thraldome *Britons* shall abide,
 And the iust reuolution measured,
 That they as Straungers shalbe notifide.
 For twise foure hundreth yeares shalbe supplide,
 Ere they to former rule restor'd shalbee,
 And their importune fates all satisfide:
 Yet during this their most obscuritee,
 Their beames shall oft breake forth, that men them faire may see.

thraldome: slavery notified: known
 line 5: i.e., at the reign of Henry VII, beginning in 1485, almost 400
 years after Cadwallader's death importune: grievous

For *Rhodoricke*, whose surname shalbe Great,
 Shall of him selfe a braue ensample shew,
 That Saxon kings his friendship shall intreat;
 And *Howell Dha* shall goodly well indew
 The saluage minds with skill of iust and trew;
 Then *Griffyth Conan* also shall vp reare
 His dreaded head, and the old sparkes renew
 Of natiue courage, that his foes shall feare,
 Least backe againe the kingdome he from them should beare.

beare: take
 The Welsh rulers of this stanza reigned from the 9th to the 12th century.

Ne shall the Saxons selues all peaceably
 Enioy the crowne, which they from Britons wonne
 First ill, and after ruled wickedly:
 For ere two hundred yeares be full outronne,
 There shall a Rauen far from rising Sunne,
 With his wide wings vpon them fiercely fly,
 And bid his faithlesse chickens ouerronne
 The fruitfull plaines, and with fell cruelty,
 In their auenge, tread downe the victours surquedry.

Raven: emblem of Denmark (The Danes first invaded in 787 A.D.)
 fell: deadly surquedry: pride

Yet shall a third both these, and thine subdew;
 There shall a Lyon from the sea-bord wood
 Of *Neustria* come roring, with a crew
 Of hungry whelpes, his battailous bold brood,
 Whose clawes were newly dipt in cruddy blood,
 That from the Daniske Tyrants head shall rend
 Th'vsurped crowne, as if that he were wood,
 And the spoile of the countrey conquered
 Emongst his young ones shall diuide with bountyhed.

A Lyon: William the Conqueror whelps: dogs battailous: warlike
 cruddy: clotted rend: cut wood: mad bountyhed: generosity

Tho when the terme is full accomplishid,
 There shall a sparke of fire, which hath long-while
 Bene in his ashes raked up, and hid,
 Be freshly kindled in the fruitfull Ile
 Of *Mona*, where it lurked in exile;
 Which shall breake forth into bright burning flame,
 And reach into the house, that beares the stile
 Of royall maiesty and soueraigne name;
 So shall the Briton bloud their crowne againe reclame.

Tho: then a sparke of fire: Henry VII *Mona*: Anglesey,
 birthplace of 1st Tudor, Henry II stile: title name: reputation

Thenceforth eternall vnion shall be made
 Betweene the nations different afore,
 And sacred Peace shall louingly perswade
 The warlike minds, to learne her goodly lore,
 And ciuile armes to exercise no more:
 Then shall a royall virgin raine, which shall
 Stretch her white rod ouer the *Belgicke* shore,
 And the great Castle smite so sore with all,
 That it shall make him shake, and shortly learne to fall.

a royall virgin raine: Elizabeth reign

But yet the end is not. There *Merlin* stayd,
 As ouercomen of the spirites powre,
 Or other ghastly spectacle dismayd,
 That secretly he saw, yet note discoure:
 Which suddein fit, and halfe extaticke stoure
 When the two fearefull women saw, they grew
 Greatly confused in behaiouure;
 At last the fury past, to former hew
 Hee turnd againe, and chearefull looks as earst did shew.

stayed: ceased As: as if stoure: agitation
 fury: seizure hew: appearance earst: before

Then, when them selues they well instructed had
 Of all, that needed them to be inquird,
 They both conceiuing hope of comfort glad,
 With lighter hearts vnto their home retir'd;
 Where they in secret counsell close conspird,
 How to effect so hard an enterprize,
 And to possesse the purpose they desird:
 Now this, now that twixt them they did deuisse,
 And diuerse plots did frame, to maske in strange disguise.

At last the Nourse in her foolhardy wit
 Conceiu'd a bold deuise, and thus bespake;
 Daughter, I deeme that counsell aye most fit,
 That of the time doth dew aduantage take;
 Ye see that good king *Vther* now doth make
 Strong warre upon the Paynim brethren, hight
Octa and *Oza*, whom he lately brake
 Beside *Cayr Verolame*, in victorious fight,
 That now all *Britanie* doth burne in armes bright.

deuise: plan deeme: think aye: always
 Paynim brethren: Pagan brothers hight: named

That therefore nought our passage may empeach,
 Let us in feigned armes our selves disguise,
 And our weake hands (whom need new strength shall teach)
 The dreadfull speare and shield to exercize:
 Ne certes daughter that same warlike wize
 I weene, would you misseeme; for ye bene tall,
 And large of limbe, t'atchieue an hard emprize,
 Ne ought ye want, but skill, which practize small
 Will bring, and shortly make you a mayd Martiall.

empeach: hinder wize: manner Ne...would you
 misseeme: wouldn't be unfitting for you emprize: enterprise
 Ne ought ye want: You lack nothing a mayd Martiall: a warlike maid

And sooth, it ought your courage much inflame,
 To heare so often, in that royall hous,
 From whence to none inferiour ye came,
 Bards tell of many women valorous
 Which have full many feats aduenturous
 Performd, in paragone of proudest men:
 The bold *Bunduca*, whose victorious
 Exploits made *Rome* to quake, stout *Guendolen*,
 Renowned *Martia*, and redoubted *Emmilien*.

sooth: truly Bards: poets paragone: emulation

And that, which more then all the rest may sway,
 Late dayes ensample, which these eyes beheld,
 In the last field before *Meneuia*
 Which *Vther* with those forrein Pagans held,
 I saw a *Saxon* Virgin, the which feld
 Great *Vlfin* thrise vpon the bloody plaine,
 And had not *Carados* her hand withheld
 From rash reuenge, she had him surely slaine,
 Yet *Carados* himselfe from her escapt with paine.

paine: difficulty

Ah read, (quoth *Britomart*) how is she hight?
 Faire *Angela* (quoth she) men do her call,
 No whit lesse faire, then terrible in fight:
 She hath the leading of a Martiall
 And mighty people, dreaded more then all
 The other *Saxons*, which do for her sake
 And loue, themselves of her name *Angles* call.
 Therefore faire Infant her ensample make
 Unto thy selfe, and equall courage to thee take.

read: tell hight: named
 Angela: Saxon queen for whom England was named

Her harty words so deepe into the mynd
 Of the young Damzell sunke, that great desire
 Of warlike armes in her forthwith they tynd,
 And generous stout courage did inspire,
 That she resolu'd, vnweeting to her Sire,
 Aduent'rous knighthood on her selfe to don,
 And counsell'd with her Nourse, her Maides attire
 To turne into a massy habergeon,
 And bad her all things put in readinesse anon.

tynd: kindled unweeting: unknown habergeon: coat of armor
 bad: told anon: immediately

Th'old woman nought, that needed, did omit;
 But all things did conueniently puruay:
 It fortun'd (so time their turne did fit)
 A band of Britons ryding on forray
 Few dayes before, had gotten a great pray
 Of Saxon goods, emongst the which was seene
 A goodly Armour, and full rich aray,
 Which long'd to *Angela*, the Saxon Queene,
 All fretted round with gold, and goodly well beseene.

puruay: provide forray: a raid pray: prey, booty
 aray: equipment fretted: adorned

The same, with all the other ornaments,
 King *Ryence* caused to be hanged hy
 In his chiefe Church, for endlesse monuments
 Of his successe and gladfull victory:
 Of which her selfe auising readily,
 In th'euening late old *Glauce* thither led
 Faire *Britomart*, and that same Armory
 Downe taking, her therein appareled,
 Well as she might, and with braue bauldrick garnished.

moniments: memorials auising: calling to mind thither: there
 Armory: armor bauldrick: shoulder belt

Beside those armes there stood a mighty speare,
 Which *Bladud* made by Magick art of yore,
 And vsd the same in battell aye to beare;
 Sith which it had bin here preseru'd in store,
 For his great vertues proued long afore:
 For neuer wight so fast in sell could sit,
 But him perforce vnto the ground it bore:
 Both speare she tooke, and shield, which hong by it:
 Both speare & shield of great powre, for her purpose fit.

yore: the old days aye: always Sith which: since when
 virtues: powers wight: person sell: saddle
 perforce: of necessity

Thus when she had the virgin all arayd,
 Another harnessse, which did hang thereby,
 About her selfe she dight, that the young Mayd
 She might in equall armes accompany,
 And as her Squire attend her carefully:
 Tho to their ready Steeds they clombe full light,
 And through back wayes, that none might them espy,
 Couered with secret cloud of silent night,
 Themselues they forth conuayd, & passed forward right.

harnessse: set of armor dight: arranged Tho: then
 Steeds: horses light: easily

Ne rested they, till that to Faery lond
 They came, as *Merlin* them directed late:
 Where meeting with this *Redcrosse* knight, she fond
 Of diuerse things discourses to dilate,
 But most of *Arthegall*, and his estate.
 At last their wayes so fell, that they mote part
 Then each to other well affectionate,
 Friendship professed with unfained hart,
 The *Redcrosse* knight diuerst, but forth rode
Britomart.

fond: found dilate: enlarge upon estate: condition
 unfained: true diuerst: turned forth: forward

Cant. IIII.

*Bold Marinell of Britomart,
 Is throwne on the Rich strond:
 Faire Florimell of Arthur is
 Long followed, but not fond.*

Where is the Antique glory now become,
 That whilome wont in women to appeare?
 Where be the braue atchieuements doen by some?
 Where be the battels, where the shield and speare,
 And all the conquests, which them high did reare,
 That matter made for famous Poets verse,
 And boastfull men so oft abasht to heare?
 Bene they all dead, and laid in dolefull herse?
 Or doen they onely sleepe, and shall againe reverse?

Antique glory: Past grandeur and respect whilome wont:
 formerly was accustomed abasht: disconcerted, made ashamed
 or confused dolefull: sorrowful reverse: return

If they be dead, then woe is me therefore:
 But if they sleepe, ô let them soone awake:
 For all too long I burne with enuy sore,
 To heare the warlike feates, which *Homere* spake
 Of bold *Penthesilee*, which made a lake
 Of *Greekish* bloud so oft in *Troian* plaine;
 But when I read, how stout *Debora* strake
 Proud *Sisera*, and how *Camill'* hath slaine
 The huge *Orsilochus*, I swell with great disdain.

The Aeneid tells the stories of Panthesilea, Queen of the Amagons,
 and of Camilla. Deborah's story is in Judges 6.

Yet these, and all that else had puissaunce,
 Cannot with noble *Britomart* compare,
 Aswell for glory of great valiaunce,
 As for pure chastitie and vertue rare,
 That all her goodly deeds do well declare.
 Well worthy stock, from which the branches sprong,
 That in late yeares so faire a blossome bare,
 As thee, ô Queene, the matter of my song,
 Whose lignage from this Lady I deriue along.

puissaunce: power

Who when through speaches with the *Redcrosse* knight,
 She learned had th'estate of *Arthegall*,
 And in each point her selfe informd aright,
 A friendly league of loue perpetuall
 She with him bound, and *Congé* tooke withall.
 Then he forth on his iourney did proceede,
 To seeke aduentures, which mote him befall,
 And win him worship through his warlike deed,
 Which alwayes of his paines he made the chiefest meed.

conge: leave meed: reward

But *Britomart* kept on her former course,
 Ne euer dofte her armes, but all the way
 Grew pensiue through that amorous discourse,
 By which the *Redcrosse* knight did earst display
 Her louers shape, and cheualrous aray;
 A thousand thoughts she fashioned in her mind,
 And in her feigning fancie did pourtray
 Him such, as fittest she for loue could find,
 Wise, warlike, personable, curteous, and kind.

dofte: past tense of doff (to take off – the opposite of don)

With such selfe-pleasing thoughts her wound she fed,
 And thought so to beguile her grieuous smart;
 But so her smart was much more grieuous bred,
 And the deepe wound more deepe engord her hart,
 That nought but death her dolour mote depart.
 So forth she rode without repose or rest,
 Searching all lands and each remotest part,
 Following the guidaunce of her blinded guest,
 Till that to the sea-coast at length she her address.

her dolour mote depart: might remove her sadness

There she alighted from her light-foot beast,
 And sitting downe vpon the rocky shore,
 Bad her old Squire vnlace her lofty creast;
 Tho hauing vewd a while the surges hore,
 That gainst the craggy cliffs did loudly rore,
 And in their raging surquedry disdaynd,
 That the fast earth affronted them so sore,
 And their deuouring couetize restraynd,
 Thereat she sighed deepe, and after thus complaynd.

bad: past tense of bid (to tell, order) creast: helmet hore: white
 surquedry: pride couetize: greed

Huge sea of sorrow, and tempestuous grieffe,
 Wherein my feeble barke is tossed long,
 Far from the hoped hauen of reliefe,
 Why do thy cruell billowes beat so strong,
 And thy moyst mountaines each on others throng,
 Threatning to swallow vp my fearefull life?
 O do thy cruell wrath and spightfull wrong
 At length allay, and stint thy stormy strife,
 Which in these troubled bowels raignes, & rageth rife.

barke: ship rife: much, abundantly

For else my feeble vessell crazd, and crackt
 Through thy strong buffets and outrageous blowes,
 Cannot endure, but needs it must be wrackt
 On the rough rocks, or on the sandy shallowes,
 The whiles that loue it steres, and fortune rowes;
 Loue my lewd Pilot hath a restlesse mind
 And fortune Boteswaine no assuraunce knowes,
 But saile withouten starres gainst tide and wind:
 How can they other do, sith both are bold and blind?

lewd: unskillful

Thou God of winds, that raignest in the seas,
 That raignest also in the Continent,
 At last blow vp some gentle gale of ease,
 The which may bring my ship, ere it be rent,
 Vnto the gladsome port of her intent:
 Then when I shall my selfe in safety see,
 A table for eternall monument
 Of thy great grace, and my great ieopardee,
 Great *Neptune*, I auow to hallow vnto thee.

the continent: land rent: split apart table: votive tablet

Then sighing softly sore, and inly deepe,
 She shut vp all her plaint in priuy grieffe;
 For her great courage would not let her weepe,
 Till that old *Glauce* gan with sharpe repriefe,
 Her to restraine, and giue her good reliefe,
 Through hope of those, which *Merlin* had her told
 Should of her name and nation be chiefe,
 And fetch their being from the sacred mould
 Of her immortall wombe, to be in heauen enrold.

priuy: secret courage: spirit repriefe: reproof

Thus as she her recomforted, she spyde,
 Where farre away one all in armour bright,
 With hastie gallop towards her did ryde;
 Her dolour soone she ceast, and on her dight
 Her Helmet, to her Courser mounting light:
 Her former sorrow into suddein wrath,
 Both coosen passions of distroubled spright,
 Conuerting, forth she beates the dustie path;
 Loue and despight attonce her courage kindled hath.

dight: put courser: horse coosen: kindred
 despight: defiance

As when a foggy mist hath ouercast
 The face of heauen, and the cleare aire engrost,
 The world in darkenesse dwels, till that at last
 The watry Southwinde from the seabord cost
 Vpblowing, doth disperse the vapour lo'st,
 And poures it selfe forth in a stormy showre;
 So the faire *Britomart* hauing disclo'st
 Her cloudy care into a wrathfull stowre,
 The mist of grieve dissolu'd, did into vengeance powre.

lines 7-9: Britomart changed from being depressed to angry.

Eftsoones her goodly shield addressing faire,
 That mortall speare she in her hand did take,
 And vnto battell did her selfe prepare.
 The knight approching, sternely her bespake;
 Sir knight, that doest thy voyage rashly make
 By this forbidden way in my despight,
 Ne doest by others death ensample take,
 I read thee soone retyre, whiles thou hast might,
 Least afterwards it be too late to take thy flight.

in my despight: in scorn of me

Ythrild with deepe disdaine of his proud threat,
 She shortly thus; Fly they, that need to fly;
 Words fearen babes. I meane not thee entreat
 To passe; but maugre thee will passe or dy.
 Ne lenger stayd for th'other to reply,
 But with sharpe speare the rest made dearly knowne.
 Strongly the straunge knight ran, and sturdily
 Strooke her full on the brest, that made her downe
 Decline her head, & touch her crouper with her crowne.

maugre: in spite of dearly: resolutely line 9: forced her
 backwards so far that her head touched her horse's back (or crupper)

But she againe him in the shield did smite,
 With so fierce furie and great puissaunce,
 That through his threesquare scuchin percing quite,
 And through his mayled hauberque, by mischaunce
 The wicked steele through his left side did glaunce;
 Him so transfixed she before her bore
 Beyond his croupe, the length of all her launce,
 Till sadly soucing on the sandie shore,
 He tumbled on an heape, and wallowd in his gore.

scuchin: shield hauberque: coat of mail soucing: falling

Like as the sacred Oxe, that carelesse stands,
 With gilden hornes, and flowry girlonds crownd,
 Proud of his dying honor and deare bands,
 Whiles th'altars fume with frankincense arownd,
 All suddenly with mortall stroke astownd,
 Doth groueling fall, and with his streaming gore
 Distaines the pillours, and the holy grownd,
 And the faire flowres, that decked him afore;
 So fell proud *Marinell* vpon the pretious shore.

astownd: stunned Distaines: stains
 Marinell – a Narcissus and an Adonis figure, associated with the sea
 [*mare* (Fr) means sea] and also reluctant to marry [*mari* (Fr) means
 husband; *nolle* (Lt) means unwilling].

The martiall Mayd stayd not him to lament,
 But forward rode, and kept her readie way
 Along the strond, which as she ouer-went,
 She saw bestrowed all with rich aray
 Of pearles and pretious stones of great assay,
 And all the grauell mixt with golden owre;
 Whereat she wondred much, but would not stay
 For gold, or perles, or pretious stones an howre,
 But them despised all; for all was in her powre.

assay: worth owre: ore for: although
 Britomart rejects the gold because Chastity defeats Avarice.

Whiles thus he lay in deadly stonishment,
 Tydings hereof came to his mothers eare;
 His mother was the blacke-browd *Cymoent*,
 The daughter of great *Nereus*, which did beare
 This warlike sonne vnto an earthly peare,
 The famous *Dumarin*; who on a day
 Finding the Nymph a sleepe in secret wheare,
 As he by chaunce did wander that same way,
 Was taken with her loue, and by her closely lay.

peare: peer, noble wheare: place

There he this knight of her begot, whom borne
 She of his father *Marinell* did name,
 And in a rocky caue as wight forlorne,
 Long time she fostred vp, till he became
 A mightie man at armes, and mickle fame
 Did get through great aduentures by him donne:
 For neuer man he suffred by that same
Rich strond to trauell, whereas he did wonne,
 But that he must do battell with the Sea-nymphes sonne.

mickle: much

An hundred knights of honorable name
 He had subdew'd and them his vassals made,
 That through all Farie lond his noble fame
 Now blazed was, and feare did all inuade,
 That none durst passen through that perilous glade.
 And to aduance his name and glorie more,
 Her Sea-god syre she dearely did perswade,
 T'endow her sonne with threasure and rich store,
 Boue all the sonnes, that were of earthly wombes ybore.

blazed: proclaimed

The God did graunt his daughters deare demandaund,
 To doen his Nephew in all riches flow;
 Eftsoones his heaped waues he did commaund,
 Out of their hollow bosome forth to throw
 All the huge threasure, which the sea below
 Had in his greedie gulfe deuoured deepe,
 And him enriched through the ouerthrow
 And wreckes of many wretches, which did weepe,
 And often waile their wealth, which he from them did keepe.

doen: make

Nephew: grandson

Shortly vpon that shore there heaped was,
 Exceeding riches and all pretious things,
 The spoyle of all the world, that it did pas
 The wealth of th'East, and pompe of *Persian* kings;
 Gold, amber, yuorie, perles, owches, rings,
 And all that else was pretious and deare,
 The sea vnto him voluntary brings,
 That shortly he a great Lord did appeare,
 As was in all the lond of Faery, or elsewheare.

owches: broaches

Thereto he was a doughtie dreaded knight,
 Tryde often to the scath of many deare,
 That none in equall armes him matchen might,
 The which his mother seeing, gan to feare
 Least his too haughtie hardines might reare
 Some hard mishap, in hazard of his life:
 For thy she oft him counseld to forbear
 The bloudie battell, and to stirre vp strife,
 But after all his warre, to rest his wearie knife.

doughtie: brave, gallant scath of many deare: harm of many
 beloved people hardiness: rudeness reare: cause
 in hazard of: to endanger For thy: therefore
 to forbear: shun, abstain from knife: sword

And for his more assurance, she inquir'd
 One day of *Proteus* by his mightie spell,
 (For *Proteus* was with prophecie inspir'd)
 Her deare sonnes destinie to her to tell,
 And the sad end of her sweet *Marinell*.
 Who through foresight of his eternall skill,
 Bad her from womankind to keepe him well:
 For of a woman he should haue much ill,
 A virgin strange and stout him should dismay, or kill.

Proteus: a god of the sea – old, able to chage shapes, possessing
 magical powers stout: bold

For thy she gaue him warning euery day,
 The loue of women not to entertaine;
 A lesson too too hard for liuing clay,
 From loue in course of nature to refraine:
 Yet he his mothers lore did well retaine,
 And euer from faire Ladies loue did fly;
 Yet many Ladies faire did oft complaine,
 That they for loue of him would algates dy:
 Dy, who so list for him, he was loues enemy.

algates: entirely

who so list for him: whoever wanted (yearned for) him

But ah, who can deceive his destiny,
 Or weene by warning to avoyd his fate?
 That when he sleepes in most security,
 And safest seemes, him soonest doth amate,
 And findeth dew effect or soone or late.
 So feeble is the powre of fleshly arme.
 His mother bad him womens loue to hate,
 For she of womans force did feare no harme;
 So weening to haue arm'd him, she did quite disarme.

amate: dismay

This was that woman, this that deadly wound,
 That *Proteus* prophecide should him dismay,
 The which his mother vainely did expound,
 To be hart-wounding loue, which should assay
 To bring her sonne vnto his last decay.
 So tickle be the termes of mortall state,
 And full of subtile sophismes, which do play
 With double senses, and with false debate,
 T'approue the vnknown purpose of eternall fate.

Vainly did expound: explained in vain assay: attempt
 tickle: uncertain sophisms: false arguments
 intentionally used to deceive approue: demonstrate

Too true the famous *Marinell* it fownd,
 Who through late triall, on that wealthy Strond
 Inglorious now lies in senselesse swownd,
 Through heauy stroke of *Britomartis* hond.
 Which when his mother deare did vnderstond,
 And heauy tydings heard, whereas she playd
 Amongst her watry sisters by a pond,
 Gathering sweet daffadillyes, to haue made
 Gay girlonds, from the Sun their forheads faire to shade.

daffadillyes: signify grief because Proserpina was gathering them
 when she was abducted into the underworld (*Winter's Tale* 4.4.116ff)

Eftsoones both flowres and girlonds farre away
 She flong, and her faire deawy lockes yrent,
 To sorrow huge she turnd her former play,
 And gamesom merth to grieuous dreriment:
 She threw her selfe downe on the Continent,
 Ne word did speake, but lay as in a swowne,
 Whiles all her sisters did for her lament,
 With yelling outcries, and with shrieking sowne;
 And euery one did teare her girlond from her crowne.

yrent: tore the Continent: the ground sowne: sound

Soone as she vp out of her deadly fit
 Arose, she bad her charet to be brought,
 And all her sisters, that with her did sit,
 Bad eke attonce their charets to be sought;
 Tho full of bitter grieffe and pensiuue thought,
 She to her wagon clombe; clombe all the rest,
 And forth together went, with sorrow fraught.
 The waues obedient to their beheast,
 Them yielded readie passage, and their rage surceast.

fit: swoon charet: chariot clombe: climbed beheast: bidding

Great *Neptune* stood amazed at their sight,
 Whiles on his broad round backe they softly slid
 And eke himselfe mournd at their mournfull plight,
 Yet wist not what their wailing ment, yet did
 For great compassion of their sorrow, bid
 His mightie waters to them buxome bee;
 Eftsoones the roaring billowes still abid,
 And all the griesly Monsters of the See
 Stood gaping at their gate, and wondred them to see.

buxome: yielding abide: remained

A teme of Dolphins raunged in aray,
 Drew the smooth charet of sad *Cymoent*;
 They were all taught by *Triton*, to obey
 To the long raynes, at her commaundement:
 As swift as swallowes, on the waues they went,
 That their broad flaggie finnes no fome did reare,
 Ne bubbling roundell they behind them sent;
 The rest of other fishes drawn weare,
 Which with their finny oars the swelling sea did sheare.

Dolphins: symbols of love and salvation Triton: Neptune's son
 who controls sea creatures flaggie: dropping

Soone as they bene arriu'd vpon the brim
 Of the *Rich strond*, their charets they forlore,
 And let their temed fishes softly swim
 Along the margent of the fomy shore,
 Least they their finnes should bruze, and surbate sore
 Their tender feet vpon the stony ground:
 And comming to the place, where all in gore
 And cruddy bloud enwallowed they found
 The lucklesse *Marinell*, lying in deadly swound;

brim: edge forlore: left surbate: chafe

His mother swowned thrise, and the third time
 Could scarce recouered be out of her paine;
 Had she not bene deuoyd of mortall slime,
 She should not then haue bene reliu'd againe,
 But soone as life recouered had the raine,
 She made so piteous mone and deare wayment,
 That the hard rocks could scarce from teares refraine,
 And all her sister Nymphes with one consent
 Supplide her sobbing breaches with sad complement.

slime: clay wayment: lamentation consent: harmony
 breaches: intervals between fits of sobbing

Deare image of my selfe (she said) that is,
 The wretched sonne of wretched mother borne,
 Is this thine high aduancement, ô is this
 Th'immortall name, with which thee yet vnborne
 Thy Gransire *Nereus* promist to adorne?
 Now lyst thou of life and honor reft;
 Now lyst thou a lumpe of earth forlorne,
 Ne of thy late life memory is left,
 Ne can thy irreuocable destiny be weft?

reft: bereft, deprived weft: avoided

Fond *Proteus*, father of false prophecis,
 And they more fond, that credit to thee giue,
 Not this the worke of womans hand ywis,
 That so deepe wound through these deare members driue.
 I feared loue: but they that loue do liue,
 But they that die, doe neither loue nor hate.
 Nath'lesse to thee thy folly I forgiue,
 And to my selfe, and to accursed fate
 The guilt I doe ascribe: deare wisdome bought too late.

Fond: foolish ywis: certainly

O what auailles it of immortall seed
 To beene ybred and neuer borne to die?
 Farre better I it deeme to die with speed,
 Then waste in woe and wailefull miserie.
 Who dyes the vtmost dolour doth abyee,
 But who that liues, is left to waile his losse:
 So life is losse, and death felicitie.
 Sad life worse then glad death: and greater crosse
 To see friends graue, then dead the graue selfe to engrosse.

deeme: think the vtmost dolour doth abyee: suffers the most
 sorrow felicitie: happiness crosse: burden engross: fill

But if the heauens did his dayes enuie,
 And my short blisse maligne, yet mote they well
 Thus much afford me, ere that he did die
 That the dim eyes of my deare *Marinell*
 I mote haue closed, and him bed farewell,
 Sith other offices for mother meet
 They would not graunt.
 Yet maulgre them farewell, my sweetest sweet;
 Farewell my sweetest sonne, sith we no more shall meet.

maligne: grudge mote: might ere: before bed: bade, told
 sith: since meet: appropriate malgre: in spite of

Thus when they all had sorrowed their fill,
 They softly gan to search his griesly wound:
 And that they might him handle more at will,
 They him disarm'd, and spredding on the ground
 Their watchet mantles frindgd with siluer round,
 They softly wipt away the gelly blood
 From th'orifice; which hauing well vpbound,
 They poured in soueraine balme, and Nectar good,
 Good both for earthly med'cine, and for heauenly food.

watchet mantles: pale blue cloaks gelly: clotted

Tho when the lilly handed *Liagore*,
 (This *Liagore* whylome had learned skill
 In leaches craft, by great *Appolloes* lore,
 Sith her whylome vpon high *Pindus* hill,
 He loued, and at last her wombe did fill
 With heauenly seed, whereof wise *Paeon* sprong)
 Did feele his pulse, she knew their staid still
 Some litle life his feeble sprites emong;
 Which to his mother told, despeire she from her flong.

Tho: then whylome: formerly leaches: doctor's
Appollo: god of healing lore: teaching *Paeon*: physician to the gods

Tho up him taking in their tender hands,
 They easily unto her charet beare:
 Her teme at her commaundement quiet stands,
 Whiles they the corse into her wagon reare,
 And strow with flowres the lamentable beare:
 Then all the rest into their coches clim,
 And through the brackish waues their passage sheare;
 Vpon great *Neptunes* necke they softly swim,
 And to her watry chamber swiftly carry him.

charet: chariot corse: corpse reare: raise
 beare: coffin sheare: cut

Deepe in the bottome of the sea, her bowre
 Is built of hollow billowes heaped hye,
 Like to thicke cloudes, that threat a stormy showre,
 And vaulted all within, like to the sky,
 In which the Gods do dwell eternally:
 There they him laid in easie couch well dight;
 And sent in haste for *Tryphon*, to apply
 Salues to his wounds, and medicines of might:
 For *Tryphon* of sea gods the soueraine leach is hight.

dight: placed
 the soueraine leach is hight: the foremost doctor is called

The whiles the *Nymphes* sit all about him round,
 Lamenting his mishap and heauy plight;
 And oft his mother vewing his wide wound,
 Cursed the hand, that did so deadly smight
 Her dearest sonne, her dearest harts delight.
 But none of all those curses ouertooke
 The warlike Maid, th'ensample of that might,
 But fairely well she thriu'd, and well did brooke
 Her noble deeds, ne her right course for ought forsooke.

heauy: sad brooke: persist in

Yet did false *Archimage* her still pursew,
 To bring to passe his mischievous intent,
 Now that he had her singled from the crew
 Of courteous knights, the Prince, and Faery gent,
 Whom late in chace of beautie excellent
 She left, pursewing that same foster strong;
 Of whose foule outrage they impatient,
 And full of fiery zeale, him followed long,
 To reskew her from shame, and to reuenge her wrong.

Archimage: a character from Books 1 and 2 whom Spenser mentions here but then drops. Line 4 refers to Arthur and Guyon from Canto 1.

Through thick and thin, through mountaines &
 through plains,
 Those two great champions did attonce pursew
 The fearefull damzell, with incessant paines:
 Who from them fled, as light-foot hare from vew
 Of hunter swift, and sent of houndes trew.
 At last they came vnto a double way,
 Where, doubtfull which to take, her to reskew,
 Themselues they did dispart, each to assay,
 Whether more happie were, to win so goodly pray.

attonce: together

But *Timias*, the Princes gentle Squire,
 That Ladies loue vnto his Lord forlent,
 And with proud enuy, and indignant ire,
 After that wicked foster fiercely went.
 So beene they three three sundry wayes ybent.
 But fairest fortune to the Prince befell,
 Whose chauce it was, that soone he did repent,
 To take that way, in which that Damozell
 Was fled afore, affraid of him, as feend of hell.

forlent: relinquished enuy: indignation ire: anger
 ybent: turned the Prince: Arthur feend: fiend, devil

At last of her farre off he gained vew:
 Then gan he freshly pricke his fomy steed,
 And euer as he nigher to her drew,
 So euermore he did increase his speed,
 And of each turning still kept warie heed:
 Aloud to her he oftentimes did call,
 To doe away vaine doubt, and needlesse dreed:
 Full myld to her he spake, and oft let fall
 Many meeke wordes, to stay and comfort her withall.

pricke: spur nigher: nearer

But nothing might relent her hastie flight;
 So deepe the deadly feare of that foule swaine
 Was earst impressed in her gentle spright:
 Like as a fearefull Doue, which through the raine,
 Of the wide aire her way does cut amaine,
 Hauing farre off espyde a Tassell gent,
 Which after her his nimble wings doth straine,
 Doubleth her haste for feare to be for-hent,
 And with her pineons cleaues the liquid firmament.

foule swain: rustic man earst: earlier raine: domain
 amaine: rapidly Tassell gent: a male falcon for-hent: seized
 pineons: wings cleaues: splits, passes through

With no lesse haste, and eke with no lesse dreed,
 That fearefull Ladie fled from him, that ment
 To her no euill thought, nor euill deed;
 Yet former feare of being fowly shent,
 Carried her forward with her first intent:
 And though oft looking backward, well she vewd,
 Her selfe freed from that foster insolent,
 And that it was a knight, which now her sewd,
 Yet she no lesse the knight feard, then that villein rude.

eke: also shent: disgraced sewd: pursued

His vncouth shield and straunge armes her dismayd,
 Whose like in Faery lond were seldome seene,
 That fast she from him fled, no lesse affrayd,
 Then of wilde beastes if she had chased beene:
 Yet he her followd still with courage keene,
 So long that now the golden *Hesperus*
 Was mounted high in top of heauen sheene,
 And warnd his other brethren ioyeous,
 To light their blessed lamps in *Ioues* eternall hous.

uncouth: unusual courage: spirit Hesperus: the evening star
 sheene: bright

All suddenly dim woxe the dampish ayre,
 And griesly shadowes couered heauen bright,
 That now with thousand starres was decked fayre;
 Which when the Prince beheld, a lothfull sight,
 And that perforce, for want of lenger light,
 He mote surcease his suit, and lose the hope
 Of his long labour, he gan fowly wyte
 His wicked fortune, that had turnd aslope,
 And cursed night, that reft from him so goodly scope.

Woxe: became perforce: of necessity want: lack
 He mote surcease his suit: He might sotp his pursuit wyte: chide,
 blame aslope: awry reft: deprived scope: accomplishment

Tho when her wayes he could no more descry,
 But to and fro at disaunture strayd;
 Like as a ship, whose Lodestarre suddenly
 Couered with cloudes, her Pilot hath dismayd;
 His wearisome pursuit perforce he stayd,
 And from his loftie steed dismounting low,
 Did let him forage. Downe himselfe he layd
 Vpon the grassie ground, to sleepe a throw;
 The cold earth was his couch, the hard steele his pillow.

descry: see, perceive disadventure: random
 perforce he stayed: of necessity he stopped athrow: awhile

54

But gentle Sleepe enuyde him any rest;
 In stead thereof sad sorrow, and disdaine
 Of his hard hap did vexe his noble brest,
 And thousand fancies bet his idle braine
 With their light wings, the sights of semblants vaine:
 Oft did he wish, that Lady faire mote bee
 His Faery Queene, for whom he did complaine:
 Or that his Faery Queene were such, as shee:
 And euer hastie Night he blamed bitterlie.

enuyde: grudged hap: lot semblants: illusions
 mote: might complain: lament

55

Night thou foule Mother of annoyance sad,
 Sister of heaue death, and nourse of woe,
 Which wast begot in heauen, but for thy bad
 And brutish shape thrust downe to hell below,
 Where by the grim floud of *Cocytus* slow
 Thy dwelling is, in *Herebus* blacke hous,
 (Blacke *Herebus* thy husband is the foe
 Of all the Gods) where thou vngratious,
 Halfe of thy dayes doest lead in horroure hideous.

annoyance: grief

56

What had th'eternall Maker need of thee,
 The world in his continuall course to keepe,
 That doest all things deface, ne lettest see
 The beautie of his worke? Indeed in sleepe
 The slouthfull bodie, that doth loue to steepe
 His lustlesse limbes, and drowne his baser mind,
 Doth praise thee oft, and oft from *Stygian* deepe
 Calles thee, his goddesse in his error blind,
 And great Dame Natures handmaide, chearing euery kind.

deface: obscure slouthfull: lazy
 to steep / His lustlesse limbes: to soak his feeble limbs
 baser: too base, low *Stygian* deepe: hell chearing: cheering up

But well I wote, that to an heauy hart
 Thou art the root and nurse of bitter cares,
 Breeder of new, renewer of old smarts:
 In stead of rest thou lendest rayling teares,
 In stead of sleepe thou sendest troublous feares,
 And dreadfull visions, in the which aliue
 The drearie image of sad death appeares:
 So from the wearie spirit thou doest driue
 Desired rest, and men of happinesse depriue.

wote: know smarts: pains rayling: bitter

58

Vnder thy mantle blacke there hidden lye,
 Light-shonning theft, and traiterous intent,
 Abhorred bloudshed, and vile felony,
 Shamefull deceipt, and daunger imminent;
 Foule horror, and eke hellish dreriment:
 All these I wote in thy protection bee,
 And light doe shonne, for feare of being shent:
 For light ylike is loth'd of them and thee,
 And all that lewdnesse loue, doe hate the light to see.

shone: shun shent: put to shame ylike: alike
 lewdness: wickedness

59

For day discouers all dishonest wayes,
 And sheweth each thing, as it is indeed:
 The prayes of high God he faire displayes,
 And his large bountie rightly doth areed.
 Dayes dearest children be the blessed seed,
 Which darknesse shall subdew, and heauen win;
 Truth is his daughter; he her first did breed,
 Most sacred virgin, without spot of sin.
 Our life is day, but death with darknesse doth begin.

areed: show

60

O when will day then turne to me againe,
 And bring with him his long expected light?
 O *Titan*, haste to reare thy ioyous waine:
 Speed thee to spred abroad thy beames bright?
 And chase away this too long lingring night,
 Chase her away, from whence she came, to hell.
 She, she it is, that hath me done despight:
 There let her with the damned spirits dwell,
 And yeeld her roome to day, that can it gouerne well.

Titan: God of the Sun waine: chariot despight: wrong

Thus did the Prince that wearie night outweare,
 In restlesse anguish and vnquiet paine:
 And earely, ere the morrow did vpreare
 His deawy head out of the *Ocean* maine,
 He vp arose, as halfe in great disdaine,
 And clombe vnto his steed. So forth he went,
 With heauie looke and lumpish pace, that plaine
 In him bewraid great grudge and maltalent:
 His steed eke seem'd t'apply his steps to his intent.

outweare: spend

maltalent: ill will

Cant. V.

*Prince Arthur heares of Florimell:
 three fosters Timias wound,
 Belphebe finds him almost dead,
 and reareth out of sownd.*

1

VVonder it is to see, in diuerse minds,
 How diuersly loue doth his pageants play,
 And shewes his powre in variable kinds:
 The baser wit, whose idle thoughts alway
 Are wont to cleaue vnto the lowly clay,
 It stirreth vp to sensuall desire,
 And in lewd slouth to wast his carelesse day:
 But in braue sprite it kindles goodly fire,
 That to all high desert and honour doth aspire.

diuerse: various "baser wit" vs "brave sprite": a person of lower character & intelligence vs a brave person
 wont to cleave: accustomed to cling line 7: [Love causes a person of "baser wit"] to waste his day in laziness.

2

Ne suffereth it vncomely idlenesse,
 In his free thought to build her sluggish nest:
 Ne suffereth it thought of vngentlenesse,
 Euer to creepe into his noble brest,
 But to the highest and the worthiest
 Lifteth it vp, that else would lowly fall:
 It lets not fall, it lets it not to rest:
 It lets not scarce this Prince to breath at all,
 But to his first poursuit him forward still doth call.

it: love

Who long time wandred through the forrest wyde,
 To finde some issue thence, till that at last
 He met a Dwarfe, that seemed terrifyde
 With some late perill, which he hardly past,
 Or other accident, which him aghast;
 Of whom he asked, whence he lately came,
 And whither now he trauelled so fast:
 For sore he swat, and running through that same
 Thicke forest, was bescratcht, & both his feet nigh lame.

swat: sweated nigh: nearly

4

Panting for breath, and almost out of hart,
 The Dwarfe him answerd, Sir, ill mote I stay
 To tell the same. I lately did depart
 From Faery court, where I haue many a day
 Serued a gentle Lady of great sway,
 And high accompt throughout all Elfin land,
 Who lately left the same, and tooke this way:
 Her now I seeke, and if ye vnderstand
 Which way she fared hath, good Sir tell out of hand.

mote: might

out of hand: at once

5

What mister wight (said he) and how arayd?
 Royally clad (quoth he) in cloth of gold,
 As meetest may beseeme a noble mayd;
 Her faire lockes in rich circler be enrold,
 A fairer wight did neuer Sunne behold,
 And on a Palfrey rides more white then snow,
 Yet she her selfe is whiter manifold:
 The surest signe, whereby ye may her know,
 Is, that she is the fairest wight aliue, I trow.

mister: kind of

wight: person

6

Now certes swaine (said he) such one I weene,
 Fast flying through this forest from her fo,
 A foule ill fauoured foster, I haue seene;
 Her selfe, well as I might, I reskewd tho,
 But could not stay; so fast she did foregoe,
 Carried away with wings of speedy feare.
 Ah dearest God (quoth he) that is great woe,
 And wondrous ruth to all, that shall it heare.
 But can ye read Sir, how I may her find, or where.

weene: know foster: forester ruth: pity read: tell, advise

Perdy me leuer were to weeten that,
 (Said he) then ransome of the richest knight,
 Or all the good that euer yet I gat:
 But froward fortune, and too forward Night
 Such happinesse did, maulgre, to me spight,
 And fro me reft both life and light attone.
 But Dwarfe aread, what is that Lady bright,
 That through this forest wandreth thus alone;
 For of her errour straunge I haue great ruth and mone.

line 1: Truly I'd rather know that froward: perverse
 maulgre: in spite of reft: took away attone: at once
 aread: listen ruth: pity

That Lady is (quoth he) where so she bee,
 The bountiest virgin, and most debonaire,
 That euer liuing eye I weene did see;
 Liues none this day, that may with her compare
 In stedfast chastitie and vertue rare,
 The goodly ornaments of beautie bright;
 And is ycleped *Florimell* the faire,
 Faire *Florimell* belou'd of many a knight,
 Yet she loues none but one, that *Marinell* is hight.

bountiest: most virtuous weene: think ycleped: called
 hight: named

A Sea-nymphes sonne, that *Marinell* is hight,
 Of my deare Dame is loued dearely well;
 In other none, but him, she sets delight,
 All her delight is set on *Marinell*;
 But he sets nought at all by *Florimell*:
 For Ladies loue his mother long ygoe
 Did him, they say, forwarne through sacred spell.
 But fame now flies, that of a forreine foe
 He is ysleine, which is the ground of all our woe.

fame: rumor

Fiue dayes there be, since he (they say) was slaine,
 And foure, since *Florimell* the Court for-went,
 And vowed neuer to returne againe,
 Till him aliue or dead she did inuent.
 Therefore, faire Sir, for loue of knighthood gent,
 And honour of trew Ladies, if ye may
 By your good counsell, or bold hardiment,
 Or succour her, or me direct the way;
 Do one, or other good, I you most humbly pray.

inuent: find

So may ye gaine to you full great renowme,
 Of all good Ladies through the world so wide,
 And haply in her hart find highest rowme,
 Of whom ye seeke to be most magnifide:
 At least eternall meede shall you abide.
 To whom the Prince; Dwarfe, comfort to thee take,
 For till thou tidings learne, what her betide,
 I here auow thee neuer to forsake.
 Ill weares he armes, that nill them vse for Ladies sake.

meede: reward tidings: news
 what her betide: what happened to her

So with the Dwarfe he backe return'd againe,
 To seeke his Lady, where he mote her find;
 But by the way he greatly gan complaine
 The want of his good Squire late left behind,
 For whom he wondrous pensieue grew in mind,
 For doubt of daunger, which mote him betide;
 For him he loued aboute all mankind,
 Hauing him trew and faithfull euer tride,
 And bold, as euer Squire that waited by knights side.

mote: might gan: began want: lack, absence

Who all this while full hardly was assayd
 Of deadly daunger, which to him betid;
 For whiles his Lord pursewd that noble Mayd,
 After that foster fowle he fiercely rid,
 To bene auenged of the shame, he did
 To that faire Damzell: Him he chaced long
 Through the thicke woods, wherein he would haue hid
 His shamefull head from his auengement strong.
 And oft him threatned death for his outrageous wrong.

Lines 1-2: (about Timias) Who meanwhile was severely tested by
 the deadly danger that happened to him

Nathlesse the villen sped him selfe so well,
 Whether through swiftnesse of his speedy beast,
 Or knowledge of those woods, where he did dwell,
 That shortly he from daunger was releast,
 And out of sight escaped at the least;
 Yet not escaped from the dew reward
 Of his bad deeds, which dayly he increast,
 Ne ceased not, till him oppressed hard
 The heauy plague, that for such leachours is prepard.

Nathlesse: nevertheless

For soone as he was vanisht out of sight,
 His coward courage gan emboldned bee,
 And cast t'auenge him of that fowle despight,
 Which he had borne of his bold enimee.
 Tho to his brethren came: for they were three
 Vngratious children of one gracelesse sire,
 And vnto them complained, how that he
 Had vsed bene of that foolehardy Squire;
 So them with bitter words he stird to bloody ire.

ire: anger

Forthwith themselues with their sad instruments
 Of spoyle and murder they gan arme byliue,
 And with him forth into the forest went,
 To wreake the wrath, which he did earst reuiue
 In their sterne brests, on him which late did driue
 Their brother to reproch and shamefull flight:
 For they had vow'd, that neuer he aliuie
 Out of that forest should escape their might;
 Vile rancour their rude harts had fild with such despight.

byliue: quickly

Within that wood there was a couert glade,
 Foreby a narrow foord, to them well knowne,
 Through which it was vneath for wight to wade;
 And now by fortune it was ouerflowne:
 By that same way they knew that Squire vnknowne
 Mote algates passe; for thy, themselues they set
 There in await, with thicke woods ouer growne,
 And all the while their malice they did whet
 With cruell threats, his passage through the ford to let.

a couert glade / Foreby a narrow ford: a secret valley beside a narrow
 ford (i.e. a place to cross a river) vneath: difficult
 algates: necessarily let: prevent

It fortun'd, as they deuized had,
 The gentle Squire came ryding that same way,
 Vnweeting of their wile and treason bad,
 And through the ford to passen did assay;
 But that fierce foster, which late fled away,
 Stoutly forth stepping on the further shore,
 Him boldly bad his passage there to stay,
 Till he had made amends, and full restore
 For all the damage, which he had him doen afore.

With that at him a quiu'ring dart he threw,
 With so fell force and villeinous despighte,
 That through his haberieon the forkehead flew,
 And through the linked mayles empierced quite,
 But had no powre in his soft flesh to bite:
 That stroke the hardy Squire did sore displease,
 But more that him he could not come to smite;
 For by no meanes the high banke he could sease,
 But labour'd long in that deepe ford with vaine disease.

fell: deadly haberieon & linked mayles: armor smite: hit
 disease: wound

And still the foster with his long bore-speare
 Him kept from landing at his wished will;
 Anone one sent out of the thicket neare
 A cruell shaft, headed with deadly ill,
 And fethered with an vn lucky quill;
 The wicked steele stayd not, till it did light
 In his left thigh, and deeply did it thrill:
 Exceeding grieffe that wound in him empight,
 But more that with his foes he could not come to fight.

anone: suddenly thrill: pierce empight: cause

At last through wrath and vengeaunce making way,
 He on the bancke arriu'd with mickle paine,
 Where the third brother him did sore assay,
 And droue at him with all his might and maine
 A forrest bill, which both his hands did straine;
 But warily he did auoide the blow,
 And with his speare requited him againe,
 That both his sides were thrilled with the throw,
 And a large streame of bloud out of the wound did flow.

wrath: anger mickle: much bill: battle ax

He tombling downe, with gnashing teeth did bite
 The bitter earth, and bad to let him in
 Into the balefull house of endlesse night,
 Where wicked ghosts do waile their former sin.
 Tho gan the battell freshly to begin;
 For nathemore for that spectacle bad,
 Did th'other two their cruell vengeaunce blin,
 But both attonce on both sides him bestad,
 And load vpon him layd, his life for to haue had.

bad: ordered baleful: hurtful Tho gan: Then began
 nathemore: never blin: cease attonce: at once
 bestad: beset

Tho when that villain he auiz'd, which late
 Affrighted had the fairest *Florimell*,
 Full of fiers fury, and indignant hate,
 To him he turned, and with rigour fell
 Smote him so rudely on the Pannikell,
 That to the chin he cleft his head in twaine:
 Downe on the ground his carkas groueling fell;
 His sinfull soule with desperate disdaine,
 Out of her fleshly ferme fled to the place of paine.

Tho: then auiz'd: noticed smote: hit
 Pannikell: helmet cleft his head in twain: cut his head in two
 ferme: lodging (his body)

That seeing now the onely last of three,
 Who with that wicked shaft him wounded had,
 Trembling with horrour, as that did foresee
 The fearefull end of his auengement sad,
 Through which he follow should his brethren bad,
 His bootelesse bow in feeble hand vpcaught,
 And therewith shot an arrow at the lad;
 Which faintly fluttering, scarce his helmet raught,
 And glauncing fell to ground, but him annoyed naught.

Brethren: brothers bootless: futile naught: not at all

With that he would haue fled into the wood;
 But *Timias* him lightly ouerhent,
 Right as he entring was into the flood,
 And strooke at him with force so violent,
 That headlesse him into the foord he sent:
 The carkas with the streame was carried downe,
 But th'head fell backward on the continent.
 So mischief fel vpon the meaners crowne;
 They three be dead with shame, the Squire liues with renowne.

ouerhent: overtook the flood: the river
 meaners: the 3 "low" brothers

He liues, but takes small ioy of his renowne;
 For of that cruell wound he bled so sore,
 That from his steed he fell in deadly swowne;
 Yet still the bloud forth gusht in so great store,
 That he lay wallowd all in his owne gore.
 Now God thee keepe, thou gentlest Squire aliue,
 Else shall thy louing Lord thee see no more,
 But both of comfort him thou shalt depriue,
 And eke thy selfe of honour, which thou didst atchiue.

Line 3: He fell off his horse in a deadly faint eke: also

Prouidence heauenly passeth liuing thought,
 And doth for wretched mens reliefe make way;
 For loe great grace or fortune thither brought
 Comfort to him, that comfortlesse now lay.
 In those same woods, ye well remember may,
 How that a noble hunteresse did wonne,
 She, that base *Braggadocchio* did affray,
 And made him fast out of the forrest runne;
Belphoebe was her name, as faire as *Phoebus* sunne.

thither: to that place wonne: live affray: frighten

She on a day, as she pursewd the chace
 Of some wild beast, which with her arrowes keene
 She wounded had, the same along did trace
 By tract of bloud, which she had freshly seene,
 To haue besprinckled all the grassy greene;
 By the great persue, which she there perceau'd,
 Well hoped she the beast engor'd had beene,
 And made more hast, the life to haue bereau'd:
 But ah, her expectation greatly was deceau'd.

Shortly she came, whereas that woefull Squire
 With bloud deformed, lay in deadly swownd:
 In whose faire eyes, like lamps of quenched fire,
 The Christall humour stood congealed rownd;
 His locks, like faded leaues fallen to grownd,
 Knotted with bloud, in bounces rudely ran,
 And his sweete lips, on which before that stownd
 The bud of youth to blossome faire began,
 Spoild of their rosie red, were woxen pale and wan.

stownd: stunned state were woxen: had become

Saw neuer liuing eye more heauy sight,
 That could haue made a rocke of stone to rew,
 Or riue in twaine: which when that Lady bright
 Besides all hope with melting eyes did vew,
 All suddainly abasht she chaunged hew,
 And with sterne horrour backward gan to start:
 But when she better him beheld, she grew
 Full of soft passion and vnwonted smart:
 The point of pittie perced through her tender hart.

heauy sight. . . twaine: the sad sight could have made a stone rock
 feel pity or break in two unwonted smart: unaccustomed pain

Meekely she bowed downe, to weete if life
 Yet in his frozen members did remaine,
 And feeling by his pulses beating rife,
 That the weake soule her seat did yet retaine,
 She cast to comfort him with busie paine:
 His double folded necke she reard vp right,
 And rubd his temples, and each trembling vaine;
 His mayled haberieon she did vndight,
 And from his head his heauy burganet did light.

weete: know rife: abundant
 line 8: she unclapsd his armor burganet: helmet

Into the woods thenceforth in hast she went,
 To seeke for hearbes, that mote him remedy;
 For she of hearbes had great intendiment,
 Taught of the Nympe, which from her infancy
 Her nourced had in trew Nobility:
 There, whether it diuine *Tobacco* were,
 Or *Panachæa*, or *Polygony*,
 She found, and brought it to her patient deare
 Who al this while lay bleeding out his hart-blood neare.

mote: might intendiment: intention, knowledge

The soueraigne weede betwixt two marbles plaine
 She pownded small, and did in peeces bruze,
 And then atweene her lilly handes twaine,
 Into his wound the iuyce thereof did scruze,
 And round about, as she could well it vze,
 The flesh therewith she suppld and did steepe,
 T'abate all spasme, and soke the swelling bruze,
 And after hauing searcht the intuse deepe,
 She with her scarfe did bind the wound frō cold to keepe.

soueraigne: powerful atween her lilly handes twaine: between her two
 white hands T'abate: to stop intuse: wound

By this he had sweete life recur'd againe,
 And groning inly deepe, at last his eyes,
 His watry eyes, drizzling like deawy raine,
 He vp gan lift toward the azure skies,
 From whence descend all hopelesse remedies:
 Therewith he sigh'd, and turning him aside,
 The goodly Mayd full of diuinities,
 And gifts of heauenly grace he by him spide,
 Her bow and gilden quiuer lying him beside.

gilden: golden

Mercy deare Lord (said he) what grace is this,
 That thou hast shewed to me sinfull wight,
 To send thine Angell from her bowre of blis,
 To comfort me in my distressed plight?
 Angell, or Goddesses do I call thee right?
 What seruice may I do vnto thee meete,
 That hast from darkenesse me returnd to light,
 And with thy heauenly salues and med'cines sweete,
 Hast drest my sinfull wounds? I kisse thy blessed feete.

Thereat she blushing said, Ah gentle Squire,
 Nor Goddesses I, nor Angell, but the Mayd,
 And daughter of a woody Nympe, desire
 No seruice, bu tthy safety and ayd;
 Which if thou gaine, I shalbe well apayd.
 We mortall wights, whose liues and fortunes bee
 To commun accidents still open layd,
 Are bound with commun bond of frailtee,
 To succour wretched wights, whom we captiued see.

By this her Damzels, which the former chace
 Had vndertaken after her, arriu'd,
 As did *Belphoebe*, in the bloody place,
 And thereby deemd the beast had bene depriu'd
 Of life, whom late their Ladies arrow ryu'd:
 For thy, the bloody tract they follow fast,
 And euery one to runne the swiftest stry'd;
 But two of them the rest far ouerpast,
 And where their Lady was, arriued at the last.

deemed: thought ryu'd: pierced For thy: therefore

Where when they saw that goodly boy, with blood
 Defowled, and their Lady dresse his wownd,
 They wondred much, and shortly vnderstood,
 How him in deadly case their Lady fownd,
 And reskewed out of the heauy stownd.
 Eftsoones his warlike courser, which was strayd
 Farre in the woods, whiles that he lay in swownd,
 She made those Damzels search, which being stayd,
 They did him set thereon, and forthwith them conuayd.

stownd: moment of trouble Eftsoones: soon courser: horse
 in swownd: in a faint

Into that forest farre they thence him led,
 Where was their dwelling, in a pleasant glade,
 With mountaines round about enuironed,
 And mighty woods, which did the valley shade,
 And like a stately Theatre it made,
 Spreading it selfe into a spatious plaine.
 And in the midst a little riuer plaide
 Emongst the pumy stones, which seemd to plaine
 With gentle murmure, that his course they did restraine.

glade: valley pumy: pumice slaine: complain

40

Beside the same a dainty place there lay,
 Planted with mirtle trees and laurels greene,
 In which the birds song many a louely lay
 Of gods high prayse, and of their louses sweet teene,
 As it an earthly Paradize had beene:
 In whose enclosed shadow there was pight
 A faire Paultion, scarcely to be seene,
 The which was all within most richly dight,
 That greatest Princes liuing it mote well delight.

lay: song teene: sorrow pight: placed
 dight: arranged mote: might

41

Thither they brought that wounded Squire, and layd
 In easie couch his feeble limbes to rest,
 He rested him a while, and then the Mayd
 His ready wound with better salues new drest;
 Dayly she dressed him, and did the best
 His grieuous hurt to garish, that she might,
 That shortly she his dolour hath redrest,
 And his foule sore reduced to faire plight:
 It she reduced, but himselfe destroyed quight.

she his dolour hath redrest: she had cured his sorrow
 faire plight: good condition

42

O foolish Physick, and vnfruitfull paine,
 That heales vp one and makes another wound:
 She his hurt thigh to him recur'd againe,
 But hurt his hart, the which before was sound,
 Through an vnwary dart, which did rebound
 From her faire eyes and gracious countenance.
 What bootes it him from death to be vnbound,
 To be captiuied in endlesse duraunce
 Of sorrow and despaire without aleggeaunce?

Physick: medicine sound: healthy countenance: face
 bootes: avails durance: prison aleggeaunce: alleviation

Still as his wound did gather, and grow hole,
 So still his hart woxe sore, and health decayd:
 Madnesse to saue a part, and lose the whole.
 Still whenas he beheld the heauenly Mayd,
 Whiles dayly plaisters to his wound she layd,
 So still his Malady the more increast,
 The whiles her matchlesse beautie him dismayd.
 Ah God, what other could he do at least,
 But loue so faire a Lady, that his life releast?

woxe sore: became hurt malady: love sickness

44

Long while he stroue in his courageous brest,
 With reason dew the passion to subdew,
 And loue for to dislodge out of his nest:
 Still when her excellencies he did vew,
 Her soueraigne bounty, and celestiall hew,
 The same to loue he strongly was constraingd:
 But when his meane estate he did reuew,
 He from such hardy boldnesse was restraingd,
 And of his lucklesse lot and cruell loue thus plaind.

his meane estate: his low birth

45

Vnthankfull wretch (said he) is this the meed,
 With which her soueraigne mercy thou doest quight?
 Thy life she saued by her gracious deed,
 But thou doest weene with villeinous despight,
 To blot her honour, and her heauenly light.
 Dye rather, dye, then so disloyally
 Deeme of her high desert, or seeme so light:
 Faire death it is to shonne more shame, to dy:
 Dye rather, dy, then euer loue disloyally.

meed: reward quight: repay weene: know
 deeme: think shone: shun

46

But if to loue disloyalty it bee,
 Shall I then hate her, that from deathes dore
 Me brought? ah farre be such reproch fro mee.
 What can I lesse do, then her loue therefore,
 Sith I her dew reward cannot restore:
 Dye rather, dye, and dying do her serue,
 Dying her serue, and liuing her adore;
 Thy life she gaue, thy life she doth deserue:
 Dye rather, dye, then euer from her seruice swerue.

sith: since

But foolish boy, what bootes thy seruice bace
 To her, to whom the heauens do serue and sew?
 Thou a meane Squire, of meeke and lowly place,
 She heauenly borne, and of celestially hew.
 How then? of all loue taketh equall vew:
 And doth not highest God vouchsafe to take
 The loue and seruice of the basest crew?
 If she will not, dye meekly for her sake;
 Dye rather, dye, then euer so faire loue forsake.

bootes: avails vouchsafe: deign

Thus warreid he long time against his will,
 Till that through weaknesse he was forst at last,
 To yield himselfe vnto the mighty ill:
 Which as a victour proud, gan ransack fast
 His inward parts, and all his entrayles wast,
 That neither bloud in face, nor life in hart
 It left, but both did quite drye vp, and blast;
 As percing leuin, which the inner part
 Of euery thing consumes, and calcineth by art.

warreid: fought leuin: lighting calcinet: pulverizes

Which seeing faire *Belphoebe*, gan to feare,
 Least that his wound were inly well not healed,
 Or that the wicked steele empoysned were:
 Litle she weend, that loue he close concealed;
 Yet still he wasted, as the snow congealed,
 When the bright sunne his beams thereon doth beat;
 Yet neuer he his hart to her reuealed,
 But rather chose to dye for sorrow great,
 Then with dishonorable termes her to entreat.

She gracious Lady, yet no paines did spare,
 To do him ease, or do him remedy:
 Many Restoratiues of vertues rare,
 And costly Cordialles she did apply,
 To mitigate his stubborne mallady:
 But that sweet Cordiall, which can restore
 A loue-sick hart, she did to him enuy;
 To him, and to all th'vnworthy world forlore
 She did enuy that soueraigne salue, in secret store.

enuy: grudge forlore: abandoned

That dainty Rose, the daughter of her Morne,
 More deare then life she tendered, whose flowre
 The girlond of her honour did adorne:
 Ne suffred she the Middayes scorching powre,
 Ne the sharp Northerne wind thereon to showre,
 But lapped vp her silken leaues most chaire,
 When so the froward skye began to lowre:
 But soone as calmed was the Christall aire,
 She did it faire dispred, and let to florish faire.

forward: perverse

lower: become dark and threatening

Eternall God in his almighty powre,
 To make ensample of his heauenly grace,
 In Paradize whilome did plant this flowre,
 Whence he it fetcht out of her natiue place,
 And did in stocke of earthly flesh enrace,
 That mortall men her glory should admire
 In gentle Ladies brest, and bounteous race
 Of woman kind it fairest flowre doth spire,
 And beareth fruit of honour and all chaste desire.

enrace: implant

spire: cause to spring

Faire ympes of beautie, whose bright shining beames
 Adorne the world with like to heauenly light,
 And to your willes both royalties and Realmes
 Subdew, through conquest of your wondrous might,
 With this faire flowre your goodly girlonds dight,
 Of chastity and vertue virginall,
 That shall embellish more your beautie bright,
 And crowne your heades with heauenly coronall,
 Such as the Angels weare before Gods tribunall.

To youre faire selues a faire ensample frame,
 Of this faire virgin, this *Belphoebe* faire,
 To whom in perfect loue, and spotlesse fame,
 Of chastitie, none liuing may compare:
 Ne poysnous Enuy iustly can empaire
 The prayse of her fresh flowring Maidenhead;
 For thy, she standeth on the highest staire
 Of th'honorable stage of womanhead,
 That Ladies all may follow her ensample dead.

empaire: diminish

For thy: therefore

In so great prayse of stedfast chastity,
 Nathlesse she was so curteous and kind,
 Tempred with grace, and goodly modesty,
 That seemed those two vertues stroue to find
 The higher place in her Heroick mind:
 So striuing each did other more augment,
 And both encreast the prayse of woman kind,
 And both encreast her beautie excellent;
 So all did make in her a perfect complement.

Cant. VI.

*The birth of faire Belphoebe and
 Of Amoret is told.
 The Gardins of Adonis fraught
 With pleasures manifold.*

1

VVEll may I weene, faire Ladies, all this while
 Ye wonder, how this noble Damozell
 So great perfections did in her compile,
 Sith that in saluage forests she did dwell,
 So farre from court and royall Citadell,
 The great schoolmistresse of all curtesy:
 Seemeth that such wild woods should far expell
 All ciuill vsage and gentility,
 And gentle sprite deforme with rude rusticity.

weene: know Sith: Since

2

But to this faire *Belphoebe* in her berth
 The heauens so fauourable were and free,
 Looking with myld aspect vpon the earth,
 In th'*Horoscope* of her natiuitee,
 That all the gifts of grace and chastitee
 On her they poured forth of plenteous horne;
Ioue laught on *Venus* from his soueraigne see,
 And *Phoebus* with faire beames did her adorne,
 And all the *Graces* rockt her cradle being borne.

soueraigne see: supreme seat

Her berth was of the wombe of Morning dew,
 And her conception of the ioyous Prime,
 And all her whole creation did her shew
 Pure and vnspotted from all loathly crime,
 That is ingenerate in fleshly slime.
 So was this virgin borne, so was she bred,
 So was she trayned vp from time to time,
 In all chast vertue, and true bounti-hed
 Till to her dew perfection she was ripened.

bounty-hed: generosity

4

Her mother was the faire *Chrysogonee*,
 The daughter of *Amphisa*, who by race
 A Faerie was, yborne of high degree,
 She bore *Belphoebe*, she bore in like cace
 Faire *Amoretta* in the second place:
 These two were twinnes, & twixt them two did share
 The heritage of all celestially grace.
 That all the rest it seem'd they robbed bare
 Of bountie, and of beautie, and all vertues rare.

5

It were a goodly storie, to declare,
 By what straunge accident faire *Chrysogone*
 Conceiu'd these infants, and how them she bare,
 In this wild Forrest wandring all alone,
 After she had nine moneths fulfilled and gone:
 For not as other wemens commune brood,
 They were enwombd in the sacred throne
 Of her chaste bodie, nor with commune food,
 As other wemens babes, they sucked vitall blood.

bare: bore, carried

6

But wondrously they were begot, and bred
 Through influence of th'heauens fruitfull ray,
 As it in antique bookes is mentioned.
 It was vpon a Sommers shynie day,
 When *Titan* faire his beames did display,
 In a fresh fountaine, farre from all mens vew,
 She bath'd her brest, the boyling heat t'allay;
 She bath'd with roses red, and violets blew,
 And all the sweetest flowres, that in the Forrest grew.

t'allay: lessen

Till faint through irkesome wearinesse, adowne
 Vpon the grassie ground her selfe she layd
 To sleepe, the whiles a gentle slombring swowne
 Vpon her fell all naked bare displayd;
 The sunne-beames bright vpon her body playd,
 Being through former bathing mollifide,
 And pierst into her wombe, where they embayd
 With so sweet sence and secret power vnspeide,
 That in her pregnant flesh they shortly fructifide.

embayd: bathed fructified: conceived

Miraculous may seeme to him, that reades
 So straunge ensample of conception;
 But reason teacheth that the fruitfull seades
 Of all things liuing, through impression
 Of the sunbeames in moyst complexion,
 Doe life conceiue and quickned are by kynd:
 So after *Nilus* invndation,
 Infinite shapes of creatures men do fynd,
 Informed in the mud, on which the Sunne hath shynd.

Great father he of generation
 Is rightly cald, th'author of life and light;
 And his faire sister for creation
 Ministreth matter fit, which tempred right
 With heate and humour, breeds the liuing wight.
 So sprong these twinnes in wombe of *Chrysogone*,
 Yet wist she nought thereof, but sore affright,
 Wondred to see her belly so vplone,
 Which still increast, till she her terme had full outgone.

Line 7: Yet she knew nothing (of her progeny), but very afraid

Whereof conceiuing shame and foule disgrace,
 Albe her guiltlesse conscience her cleard,
 She fled into the wildernesse a space,
 Till that vnweeldy burden she had reard,
 And shund dishonor, which as death she feard:
 Where wearie of long trauell, downe to rest
 Her selfe she set, and comfortably cheard;
 There a sad cloud of sleepe her ouerkest,
 And seized euery sense with sorrow sore opprest.

Albe: although The story resumes at stanza 26.

It fortun'd, faire *Venus* hauing lost
 Her little sonne, the winged god of loue,
 Who for some light displeasure, which him crost,
 Was from her fled, as flit as ayerie Doue,
 And left her blisfull bowre of ioy aboue,
 (So from her often he had fled away,
 When she for ought him sharpely did reprove,
 And wandred in the world in strange aray,
 Disguiz'd in thousand shapes, that none might him bewray.)

As flit as ayerie Doue: as fast as a dove bowre: bedroom
 aray: clothes bewray: reveal

Him for to seeke, she left her heauenly hous,
 The house of goodly formes and faire aspects,
 Whence all the world deriues the glorious
 Features of beautie, and all shapes select,
 With which high God his workmanship hath deckt;
 And searched euery way, through which his wings
 Had borne him, or his tract she mote detect:
 She promist kisses sweet, and sweeter things
 Vnto the man, that of him tydings to her brings.

mote: might tidings: news

First she him sought in Court, where most he vsed
 Whylome to haunt, but there she found him not;
 But many there she found, which sore accused
 His falsehood, and with foule infamous blot
 His cruell deedes and wicked wyles did spot:
 Ladies and Lords she euery where mote heare
 Complayning, how with his empoynsed shot
 Their wofull harts he wounded had whyleare,
 And so had left them languishing twixt hope and feare.

Whylome: formerly wyles: tricks whyleare: lately
 twixt: between

She then the Citties sought from gate to gate,
 And euery one did aske, did he him see;
 And euery one her answerd, that too late
 He had him seene, and felt the crueltie
 Of his sharpe darts and whot artillerie;
 And euery one threw forth reproches rife
 Of his mischieuous deedes, and said, that hee
 Was the disturber of all ciuill life,
 The enemy of peace, and author of all strife.

reproaches rife: numerous criticisms

Then in the countrey she abroad him sought,
 And in the rurall cottages inquired,
 Where also many plaints to her were brought,
 How he their heedlesse harts with loue had fyred,
 And his false venim through their veines inspyred;
 And eke the gentle shepheard swaynes, which sat
 Keeping their fleecie flockes, as they were hyred,
 She sweetly heard complaine, both how and what
 Her sonne had to them doen; yet she did smile thereat.

plaints: complaints heedlesse: careless eke: also
 swaynes: men

But when in none of all these she him got,
 She gan auize, where else he mote him hyde:
 At last she her bethought, that she had not
 Yet sought the saluage woods and forrests wyde,
 In which full many louely Nymphes abyde,
 Mongst whom might be, that he did closely lye,
 Or that the loue of some of them him tyde:
 For thy, she thither cast her course t'apply,
 To search the secret haunts of *Dianes* company.

mote: might Nymphes abyde: girls live For thy: therefore

Shortly vnto the wastefull woods she came,
 Whereas she found the Goddesse with her crew,
 After late chace of their embrewed game,
 Sitting beside a fountaine in a rew,
 Some of them washing with the liquid dew
 From off their dainty limbes the dustie sweat,
 And soyle which did deforme their liuely hew;
 Others lay shaded from the scorching heat;
 The rest vpon her person gaued attendance great.

She hauing hong vpon a bough on high
 Her bow and painted quiuer, had vnlaste
 Her siluer buskins from her nimble thigh,
 And her lancke loynes vngirt, and breasts vnbraste,
 After her heat the breathing cold to taste;
 Her golden lockes, that late in tresses bright
 Embreaded were for hindring of her haste,
 Now loose about her shoulders hong vndight,
 And were with sweet *Ambrosia* all besprinkled light.

Vnlaste / Her silver buskins: untied her high boots
 vnbraste: unfastened vndight: loosed
Ambrosia: food of the Gods

Soone as she *Venus* saw behind her backe,
 She was asham'd to be so loose surprized,
 And woxe halfe wroth against her damzels slacke,
 That had not her thereof before auized,
 But suffred her so carelesly disguised
 Be ouertaken. Soone her garments loose
 Vpgath'ring, in her bosome she comprized,
 Well as she might, and to the Goddesse rose,
 Whiles all her Nymphes did like a girlond her enclose.

woxe halfe wroth: became somewhat angry girlond: victory wreath

Goodly she gan faire *Cytherea* greet,
 And shortly asked her, what cause her brought
 Into that wildernesse for her vnmeet,
 From her sweet bowres, and beds with pleasures fraught:
 That suddein change she strange aduenture thought.
 To whom halfe weeping, she thus answered,
 That she her dearest sonne *Cupido* sought,
 Who in his frowardnesse from her was fled;
 That she repented sore, to haue him angered.

vnmeet: inappropriate bowres: bedrooms fraught: full
 frowardnesse: disobedience

Thereat *Diana* gan to smile, in scorne
 Of her vaine plaint, and to her scoffing sayd;
 Great pittie sure, that ye be so forlorne
 Of your gay sonne, that giues ye so good ayd
 To your disports: ill mote ye bene apayd.
 But she was more engrieued, and replide;
 Faire sister, ill beseemes it to vpbrayd
 A dolefull heart with so disdainfull pride;
 The like that mine, may be your paine another tide.

apayd: pleased, satisfied vpbrayd: fuss at
 dolefull: sorrowful tide: time

As you in woods and wanton wildernesse
 Your glory set, to chace the saluage beasts,
 So my delight is all in ioyfulnesse,
 In beds, in bowres, in banckets, and in feasts:
 And ill becomes you with your loftie creasts,
 To scorne the ioy, that *loue* is glad to seeke;
 We both are bound to follow heauens beheasts,
 And tend our charges with obeisance meeke:
 Spare, gentle sister, with reproch my paine to eeke.

beheasts: orders obeisance: deference, obedience
 eeke: increase

And tell me, if that ye my sonne haue heard,
 To lurke amongst your Nymphes in secret wize;
 Or keepe their cabins: much I am affeard,
 Least he like one of them him selfe disguise,
 And turne his arrowes to their exercize:
 So may he long himselfe full easie hide:
 For he is faire and fresh in face and guize,
 As any Nymph (let not it be enuyde,)
 So saying euery Nymph full narrowly she eyde.

Least: lest, for fear that guize: appearance

But *Phoebe* therewith sore was angered,
 And sharply said; Goe Dame, goe seeke your boy,
 Where you him lately left, in *Mars* his bed;
 He comes not here, we scorne his foolish ioy,
 Ne lend we leisure to his idle toy:
 But if I catch him in this company,
 By *Stygian* lake I vow, whose sad annoy
 The Gods doe dread, he dearely shall abyde:
 Ile clip his wanton wings, that he no more shall fly.

abye: pay the penalty of, suffer for clip: cut
 wanton: undisciplined, sensual

Whom when as *Venus* saw so sore displeasd,
 She inly sory was, and gan relent,
 What she had said: so her she soone appeasd,
 With sugred words and gentle blandishment,
 Which as a fountaine from her sweet lips went,
 And welled goodly forth, that in short space
 She was well pleasd, and forth her damzels sent,
 Through all the woods, to search from place to place,
 If any tract of him or tydings they mote trace.

blandishment: coaxing words
 line 9: If they might find any trace or news of him

To search the God of loue, her Nymphes she sent
 Throughout the wandring forrest euery where:
 And after them her selfe eke with her went
 To seeke the fugitiue, both farre and nere,
 So long they sought, till they arriued were
 In that same shadie couert, whereas lay
 Faire *Crysgone* in slombry traunce whilere:
 Who in her sleepe (a wondrous thing to say)
 Vnwares had borne two babes, as faire as springing day.

eke: also shadie couert: hidden spot in the woods
 whilere: earlier

Vnwares she them conceiu'd, vnwares she bore:
 She bore withouten paine, that she conceiued
 Withouten pleasure: ne her need implore
Lucinaes aide: which when they both perceiued,
 They were through wonder nigh of sense bereaued,
 And gazing each on other, nought bespake:
 At last they both agreed, her seeming griued
 Out of her heauy swowne not to awake,
 But from her louing side the tender babes to take.

Lucinaes: the goddess of childbirth nigh of sense bereaued:
 nearly senseless nought bespake: said nothing

Vp they them tooke, each one a babe vptooke,
 And with them carried, to be fostered;
 Dame *Phoebe* to a Nymph her babe betooke,
 To be vpbrought in perfect Maydenhed,
 And of her selfe her name *Belphoebe* red:
 But *Venus* hers thence farre away conuayd,
 To be vpbrought in goodly womanhed,
 And in her litle loues stead, which was strayd,
 Her *Amoretta* cald, to comfort her dismayd.

red: declared *Amoretta* means "Little Love."

She brought her to her ioyous Paradize,
 Where most she wonnes, when she on earth does dwell.
 So faire a place, as Nature can deuize:
 Whether in *Paphos*, or *Cytheron* hill,
 Or it in *Gnidus* be, I wote not well;
 But well I wote by tryall, that this same
 All other pleasant places doth excell,
 And called is by her lost louers name,
 The *Gardin* of *Adonis*, farre renownd by fame.

wonnes: lives I wote not well: I don't know [where the
 place was] farre renownd by fame: widely known

In that same Gardin all the goodly flowres,
 Wherewith dame Nature doth her beautifie,
 And decks the girlonds of her paramoures,
 Are fetcht: there is the first seminarie
 Of all things, that are borne to liue and die,
 According to their kindes. Long worke it were,
 Here to account the endlessse progenie
 Of all the weedes, that bud and blossome there;
 But so much as doth need, must needs be counted here.

seminarie: seed progenie: offspring

It sited was in fruitfull soyle of old,
 And girt in with two walles on either side;
 The one of yron, the other of bright gold,
 That none might thorough breake, nor ouer-stride:
 And double gates it had, which opened wide,
 By which both in and out men moten pas;
 Th'one faire and fresh, the other old and dride:
 Old *Genius* the porter of them was,
 Old *Genius*, the which a double nature has.

sited: situated girt: surrounded moten: might

He letteth in, he letteth out to wend,
 All that to come into the world desire;
 A thousand thousand naked babes attend
 About him day and night, which doe require,
 That he with fleshly weedes would them attire:
 Such as him list, such as eternall fate
 Ordained hath, he clothes with sinfull mire,
 And sendeth forth to liue in mortall state,
 Till they againe returne backe by the hinder gate.

wend: go with fleshly weedes [clothes] would them attire:
 incarnate, make them human, give them bodies
 list: wishes mire: mud, slush hinder: back

After that they againe returned beene,
 They in that Gardin planted be againe;
 And grow afresh, as they had neuer seene
 Fleshly corruption, nor mortall paine.
 Some thousand yeares so doen they there remaine;
 And then of him are clad with other hew,
 Or sent into the changefull world againe,
 Till thither they returne, where first they grew:
 So like a wheele around they runne from old to new.

Line 6: They are reincarnated.

Ne needs there Gardiner to set, or sow,
 To plant or prune: for of their owne accord
 All things, as they created were, doe grow,
 And yet remember well the mightie word,
 Which first was spoken by th'Almightie lord,
 That bad them to increase and multiply:
 Ne doe they need with water of the ford,
 Or of the clouds to moysten their roots dry;
 For in themselues eternall moisture they imply.

Bad: ordered ford: river

Infinite shapes of creatures there are bred,
 And vncouth formes, which none yet euer knew,
 And euery sort is in a sundry bed
 Set by it selfe, and ranckt in comely rew:
 Some fit for reasonable soules t'indew,
 Some made for beasts, some made for birds to weare,
 And all the fruitfull spawne of fishes hew
 In endlesse rancks along enraunged were,
 That seem'd the *Ocean* could not containe them there.

vncouth: outlandish sundry: various
 comely rew: attractive rows t'indew: to infuse, permeate, inhabit

Daily they grow, and daily forth are sent
 Into the world, it to replenish more;
 Yet is the stocke not lessened, nor spent,
 But still remaines in euerlasting store,
 As it at first created was of yore.
 For in the wide wombe of the world there lyes,
 In hatefull darkenesse and in deepe horrore,
 An hew eternall *Chaos*, which supplies
 The substances of natures fruitfull progenyes.

yore: the old days progenyes: offspring

All things from thence doe their first being fetch,
 And borrow matter, whereof they are made,
 Which when as forme and feature it does ketch,
 Becomes a bodie, and doth then inuade
 The state of life, out of the griesly shade.
 That substance is eterne, and bideth so,
 Ne when the life decayes, and forme does fade,
 Doth it consume, and into nothing go,
 But changed is, and often altred to and fro.

bideth: remains Ne: Nor

The substance is not chaunged, nor altered,
 But th'only forme and outward fashion;
 For euery substance is conditioned
 To change her hew, and sundry formes to don,
 Meet for her temper and complexion:
 For formes are variable and decay,
 By course of kind, and by occasion;
 And that faire flowre of beautie fades away,
 As doth the lilly fresh before the sunny ray.

sundry formes to don: to put on various forms
 Meet: appropriate

Great enemy to it, and to all the rest,
 That in the *Gardin* of *Adonis* springs,
 Is wicked *Time*, who with his scyth adrest,
 Does mow the flowring herbes and goodly things,
 And all their glory to the ground downe flings,
 Where they doe wither, and are fowly mard:
 He flyes about, and with his flaggy wings
 Beates downe both leaues and buds without regard,
 Ne euer pittie may relent his malice hard.

scythe: curved-blade reaping instrument flaggy: loose

40

Yet pittie often did the gods relent,
 To see so faire things mard, and spoyled quight:
 And their great mother *Venus* did lament
 The losse of her deare brood, her deare delight:
 Her hart was pierst with pittie at the sight,
 When walking through the *Gardin*, them she spyde,
 Yet no'te she find redresse for such despyght.
 For all that liues, is subject to that law:
 All things decay in time, and to their end do draw.

Line 7: Yet she might not find correction for such malice.

41

But were it not, that *Time* their troubler is,
 All that in this delightfull *Gardin* growes,
 Should happie be, and haue immortall blis:
 For here all plentie, and all pleasure flowes,
 And sweet loue gentle fits amongst them throwes,
 Without fell rancor, or fond gealosie;
 Franckly each paramour his leman knowes,
 Each bird his mate, ne any does enuie
 Their goodly meriment, and gay felicitie.

fond: foolish leman: beloved

42

There is continuall spring, and haruest there
 Continuall, both meeting at one time:
 For both the boughes doe laughing blossomes beare,
 And with fresh colours decke the wanton Prime,
 And eke attonce the heauy trees they clime,
 Which seeme to labour vnder their fruits lode:
 The whiles the ioyous birdes make their pastime
 Amongst the shadie leaues, their sweet abode,
 And their true loues without suspicion tell abroad.

eke attonce: also at the same time

Right in the midst of that *Paradise*,
 There stood a stately Mount, on whose round top
 A gloomy groue of mirtle trees did rise,
 Whose shadie boughes sharpe steele did neuer lop,
 Nor wicked beasts their tender buds did crop,
 But like a girlond compassed the hight,
 And from their fruitfull sides sweet gum did drop,
 That all the ground with precious deaw bedight,
 Threw forth most dainty odours, & most sweet delight.

lop: cut girlond: victory wreath bedight: adorned

44

And in the thickest couert of that shade,
 There was a pleasant arbour, not by art,
 But of the trees owne inclination made,
 Which knitting their rancke braunches part to part,
 With wanton yuie twyne entrayld athwart,
 And *Eglantine*, and *Caprifole* emong,
 Fashiond about within their inmost part,
 That nether *Phoebus* beams could through them throng,
 Nor *Aeolus* sharp blast could worke them any wrong.

couert: hidden place athwart: across
Eglantine, and *Caprifole*: honeysuckle and woodbine

45

And all about grew euery sort of flowre,
 To which sad louers were transformd of yore;
 Fresh *Hyacinthus*, *Phoebus* paramoure,
 And dearest loue:
 Foolish *Narcisse*, that likes the watry shore,
 Sad *Amaranthus*, made a flowre but late,
 Sad *Amaranthus*, in whose purple gore
 Me seemes I see *Amintas* wretched fate,
 To whom sweet Poets verse hath giuen endlesse date.

yore: the old days

46

There wont faire *Venus* often to enioy
 Her deare *Adonis* ioyous company,
 And reape sweet pleasure of the wanton boy;
 There yet, some say, in secret he does ly,
 Lapped in flowres and pretious spycery,
 By her hid from the world, and from the skill
 Of *Stygian* Gods, which doe her loue enuy;
 But she her selfe, when euer that she will,
 Possesseth him, and of his sweetnesse takes her fill.

wont: was accustomed

And sooth it seemes they say: for he may not
 For euer die, and euer buried bee
 In balefull night, where all things are forgot;
 All be he subiect to mortalitie,
 Yet is eterne in mutabilitie,
 And by succession made perpetuall,
 Transformed oft, and chaunged diuerslie:
 For him the Father of all formes they call;
 Therefore needs mote he liue, that liuing giues to all.

sooth: truly baleful: evil mutability: change
 needs mote: must

There now he liueth in eternall blis,
 Ioying his goddesse, and of her enioyd:
 Ne feareth he henceforth that foe of his,
 Which with his cruell tuske him deadly cloyd:
 For that wilde Bore, the which him once annoyd,
 She firmly hath emprisoned for ay,
 That her sweet loue his malice mote auoyd,
 In a strong rocky Caue, which is they say,
 Hewen vnderneath that Mount, that none him losen may.

Ay: ever mote: might Hewen: cut out

There now he liues in euerlasting ioy,
 With many of the Gods in company,
 Which thither haunt, and with the winged boy
 Sporting himselfe in safe felicity:
 Who when he hath with spoiles and cruelty
 Ransackt the world, and in the wofull harts
 Of many wretches set his triumphes hye,
 Thither resorts, and laying his sad darts
 Aside, with faire *Adonis* playes his wanton parts.

And his true loue faire *Psyche* with him playes,
 Faire *Psyche* to him lately reconcyld,
 After long troubles and vnmeet vpbrayes,
 With which his mother *Venus* her reuyld,
 And eke himselfe her cruelly exyld:
 But now in stedfast loue and happy state
 She with him liues, and hath him borne a chyld,
Pleasure, that doth both gods and men aggrate,
Pleasure, the daughter of *Cupid* and *Psyche* late.

Vnmeet vpbrayes: inappropriate arguments
 reuyld: talked badly about eke: also
 aggrate: charm, delight late: recently

Hither great *Venus* brought this infant faire,
 The younger daughter of *Chrysogonee*,
 And vnto *Psyche* with great trust and care
 Committed her, yfostered to bee,
 And trained vp in true feminitee:
 Who no lesse carefully her tendered,
 Then her owne daughter *Pleasure*, to whom shee
 Made her companion, and her lessoned
 In all the lore of loue, and goodly womanhead.

tendered: took care of her lessoned / In all the lore of love:
 taught her all about love

In which when she to perfect ripenesse grew,
 Of grace and beautie noble Paragone,
 She brought her forth into the worldes vew,
 To be th'ensample of true loue alone,
 And Lodestarre of all chaste affectione,
 To all faire Ladies, that doe liue on ground.
 To Faery court she came, where many one
 Admyrd her goodly haueour, and found
 His feeble hart wide launched with loues cruell wound.

Paragone: a model of excellence Lodestarre: star used as a
 guide in navigation, a guiding example haueour: behavior
 launched: pierced

But she to none of them her loue did cast,
 Sae to the noble knight Sir *Scudamore*,
 To whom her louing hart she linked fast
 In faithfull loue, t'abide for euer more,
 And for his dearest sake endured sore,
 Sore trouble of an hainous enemy;
 Who her would forced haue to haue forlore
 Her former loue, and stedfast loialty,
 As ye may elsewhere read that ruefull history.

Sae: except t'abide: remain
 sore: extreme forlore: abandoned
 that ruefull history: that sad story (It's told in Cantos 11 and 12.)

But well I weene, ye first desire to learne,
 What end vnto that fearefull Damozell,
 Which fled so fast from that same foster stearne,
 Whom with his brethren *Timias* slew, befell:
 That was to weet, the goodly *Florimell*;
 Who wandring for to seeke her louer deare,
 Her louer deare, her dearest *Marinell*,
 Into misfortune fell, as ye did heare,
 And from Prince *Arthur* fled with wings of idle feare.

weene: suppose to weet: know fell: deadly

Cant. VII.

4

*The witches sonne loues Florimell:
she flyes, he faines to die.
Satyrane saues the Squire of Dames
from Gyants tyrannie.*

faines: pretends

1

L Ike as an Hynd forth singled from the heard,
That hath escaped from a rauenous beast,
Yet flyes away of her owne feet affeard,
And euery leafe, that shaketh with the least
Murmure of winde, her terror hath encreast;
So fled faire *Florimell* from her vaine feare,
Long after she from perill was releast:
Each shade she saw, and each noyse she did heare,
Did seeme to be the same, which she escapt whyleare.

Hynd: deer whyleare: earlier

2

All that same euening she in flying spent,
And all that night her course continewed:
Ne did she let dull sleepe once to relent,
Nor wearinesse to slacke her hast, but fled
Euer alike, as if her former dred
Were hard behind, her readie to arrest:
And her white Palfrey hauing conquered
The maistring raines out of her weary wrest,
Perforce her carried, where euer he thought best.

Palfrey: horse
line 8: the controlling reins out of her exhausted wrist
Perforce: necessarily

3

So long as breath, and hable puissance
Did natiue courage vnto him supply,
His pace he freshly forward did aduance,
And carried her beyond all ieopardy,
But nought that wanteth rest, can long aby.
He hauing through incessant trauell spent
His force, at last perforce a downe did ly,
Ne foot could further moue: the Lady gent
Thereat was suddein strooke with great astonishment.

hable puissance: able power
nought that wanteth rest: nothing that lacks rest aby: continue
the Lady gent: the gentle lady spent: exhausted

And forst t'alight, on foot mote algates fare,
A traueller vnwonted to such way:
Need teacheth her this lesson hard and rare,
That fortune all in equall launce doth sway,
And mortall miseries doth make her play.
So long she trauelled, till at length she came
To an hilles side, which did to her bewray
A little valley, subiect to the same,
All couerd with thick woods, that quite it ouercame.

algates: altogether vnwonted: unaccustomed
launces: balance bewray: reveal

5

Through the tops of the high trees she did descry
A litle smoke, whose vapour thin and light,
Reeking aloft, vprolled to the sky:
Which, chearefull signe did send vnto her sight,
That in the same did wonne some liuing wight.
Eftsoones her steps she thereunto applyde,
And came at last in weary wretched plight
Vnto the place, to which her hope did guyde,
To find some refuge there, and rest her weary syde.

descry: make out reeking: floating woone: live
Eftsoones: soon after plight: condition

6

There in a gloomy hollow glen she found
A little cottage, built of stickes and reedes
In homely wize, and wald with sods around,
In which a witch did dwell, in loathly weedes,
And wilfull want, all carelesse of her needes;
So choosing solitarie to abide,
Far from all neighbours, that her deuilish deedes
And hellish arts from people she might hide,
And hurt far off vnknowne, whom euer she enuide.

glen: valley loathly weeds: loathsome clothes
willful want: deliberate poverty
line 9: She hurts from afar whoever she envies without their knowing it.

7

The Damzell there arriuing entred in;
Where sitting on the flore the Hag she found,
Busie (as seem'd) about some wicked gin:
Who soone as she beheld that suddein stound,
Lightly vpstart from the dustie ground,
And with fell looke and hollow deadly gaze
Stared on her awhile, as one astound,
Ne had one word to speake, for great amaze,
But shewd by outward signes, that dread her sence did daze.

gin: trick stound: danger fell: deadly astound: astonished

At last turning her feare to foolish wrath,
 She askt, what deuill had her thither brought,
 And who she was, and what vnwonted path
 Had guided her, vnwelcomed, vnsought?
 To which the Damzell full of doubtfull thought,
 Her mildly answer'd; Beldame be not wroth
 With silly Virgin by aduenture brought
 Vnto your dwelling, ignorant and loth,
 That craue but rowme to rest, while tempest ouerblo'th.

wrath: anger vnwonted: unaccustomed Beldame: old lady
 wroth: wrathful, angry loth: reluctant tempest: storm

With that adowne out of her Christall eyne
 Few trickling teares she softly forth let fall,
 That like two Orient pearles, did purely shyne
 Vpon her snowy cheeke; and therewithall
 She sighed soft, that none so bestiall,
 Nor saluage hart, but ruth of her sad plight
 Would make to melt, or pitteously appall;
 And that vile Hag, all were her whole delight
 In mischief, was much moued at so pitteous sight.

ruth: pity plight: condition appall: dismay

And gan recomfort her in her rude wyse,
 With womanish compassion of her plaint,
 Wiping the teares from her suffused eyes,
 And bidding her sit downe, to rest her faint
 And wearie limbs a while. She nothing quaint
 Nor s'deignfull of so homely fashion,
 Sith brought she was now to so hard constraint,
 Sate downe vpon the dusty ground anon,
 As glad of that small rest, as Bird of tempest gon.

gan: began plaint: complaint sith: since
 constraint: distress anon: immediately

Tho gan she gather vp her garments rent,
 And her loose lockes to dight in order dew,
 With golden wreath and gorgeous ornament;
 Whom such whenas the wicked Hag did vew,
 She was astonisht at her heauenly hew,
 And doubted her to deeme an earthly wight,
 But or some Goddess, or of *Dianes* crew,
 And thought her to adore with humble spright;
 T'adore thing so diuine as beauty, were but right.

Tho gan she: Then she began rent: ripped
 dight: put deeme: think spright: spirit

This wicked woman had a wicked sonne,
 The comfort of her age and weary dayes,
 A laesie loord, for nothing good to donne,
 But stretched forth in idlenesse alwayes,
 Ne euer cast his mind to couet prayse,
 Or ply him selfe to any honest trade,
 But all the day before the sunny rayes
 He vs'd to slug, or sleepe in slothfull shade:
 Such laesinesse both lewd and poore attonce him made.

line 3: a lazy good-for-nothing to couet prayse: to want praise
 slug: live idly slothfull: lazy

He comming home at vndertime, there found
 The fairest creature, that he euer saw,
 Sitting beside his mother on the ground;
 The sight whereof did greatly him adaw,
 And his base thought with terrour and with aw
 So inly smot, that as one, which had gazed
 On the bright Sunne vnwares, doth soone withdraw
 His feeble eyne, with too much brightnesse dazed,
 So stared he on her, and stood long while amazed.

vndertime: time of the mid-day meal adaw: tame, moderate
 smot: hit

Softly at last he gan his mother aske,
 What mister wight that was, and whence deriued,
 That in so straunge disguizement there did maske,
 And by what accident she there arriued:
 But she, as one nigh of her wits depriued,
 With nought but ghastly lookes him answered,
 Like to a ghost, that lately is reuiued
 From *Stygian* shores, where late it wandered;
 So both at her, and each at other wondered.

mister wight: kind of person nigh: nearly nought: nothing

But the faire Virgin was so meeke and mild,
 That she to them vouchsafed to embace
 Her goodly port, and to their senses vild,
 Her gentle speach applide, that in short space
 She grew familiare in that desert place.
 During which time, the Chorle through her so kind
 And curteise vse conceiu'd affection bace,
 And cast to loue her in his brutish mind;
 No loue, but brutish lust, that was so beastly tind.

vouchsafed: allowed port: demeanor, bearing
 Chorle: british fellow tind: inflamed

Closely the wicked flame his bowels brent,
 And shortly grew into outrageous fire;
 Yet had he not the hart, nor hardiment,
 As vnto her to vtter his desire;
 His caytiue thought durst not so high aspire,
 But with soft sighes, and louely semblaunces,
 He ween'd that his affection entire
 She should aread; many resemblaunces
 To her he made, and many kind remembraunces.

brent: burned hardiment: bravery caytiue: cowardly
 durst: dared semblaunces: entertainment ween'd: thought
 aread: detect resemblances: looks

Oft from the forrest wildings he did bring,
 Whose sides empurpled were with smiling red,
 And oft young birds, which he had taught to sing
 His mistresse prayses, sweetly caroled,
 Girllonds of flowres sometimes for her faire hed
 He fine would dight; sometimes the squirell wild
 He brought to her in bands, as conquered
 To be her thrall, his fellow seruant vild;
 All which, she of him tooke with countenance meeke
 and mild.

wildings: animals dight: put, placed thrall: servant
 countenance: face

But past awhile, when she fit season saw
 To leaue that desert mansion, she cast
 In secret wize her selfe thence to withdraw,
 For feare of mischief, which she did forecast
 Might by the witch or by her sonne compass:
 Her wearie Palfrey closely, as she might,
 Now well recouered after long repast,
 In his proud furnitures she freshly dight,
 His late miswandred wayes now to remeasure right.

Palfrey: horse repast: rest & relaxation
 furnitures: equipment

And earely ere the dawning day appeard,
 She forth issewed, and on her iourney went;
 She went in perill, of each noyse affeard,
 And of each shade, that did it selfe present;
 For still she feared to be ouerhent,
 Of that vile hag, or her vnciuile sonne:
 Who when too late awaking, well they kent,
 That their faire guest was gone, they both begonne
 To make exceeding mone, as they had bene vndonne.

ere: before ouerhent: overtaken kent: realized

But that lewd loue did the most lament
 For her depart, that euer man did heare;
 He knockt his brest with desperate intent,
 And scratcht his face, and with his teeth did teare
 His rugged flesh, and rent his ragged heare:
 That his sad mother seeing his sore plight,
 Was greatly woe begon, and gan to feare,
 Least his fraile senses were emperisht quight,
 And loue to frenzy turnd, sith loue is franticke hight.

rent: tear plight: situation
 loue is franticke hight: love is called madness

All wayes she sought, him to restore to plight,
 With herbs, with charms, with counsell, & with teares,
 But tears, nor charms, nor herbs, nor counsell might
 Asswage the fury, which his entrails teares:
 So strong is passion, that no reason heares.
 Tho when all other helps she saw to faile,
 She turnd her selfe backe to her wicked leares
 And by her deuilish arts thought to preuaile,
 To bring her backe againe, or worke her finall bale.

plight: his proper condition asswage: alleviate
 entrails: innards Tho: then leares: lessons bale: evil

Eftsoones out of her hidden caue she cald
 An hideous beast, of horrible aspect,
 That could the stoutest courage haue appald;
 Monstrous mishapt, and all his backe was spect
 With thousand spots of colours queint elect,
 Thereto so swift, that it all beasts did pas:
 Like neuer yet did liuing eye detect;
 But likest it to an *Hyena* was,
 That feeds on womens flesh, as others feede on gras.

Eftsoones: soon after appald: dismayed spect: speckled
 queint: quenched

It forth she cald, and gaue it streight in charge,
 Through thicke and thin her to pursew apace,
 Ne once to stay to rest, or breath at large,
 Till her he had attaind, and brought in place,
 Or quite deuourd her beauties scornefull grace.
 The Monster swift as word, that from her went,
 Went forth in hast, and did her footing trace
 So sure and swiftly, through his perfect scent,
 And passing speede, that shortly he her ouerhent.

apace: fast

Whom when the fearefull Damzell nigh espide,
 No need to bid her fast away to flie;
 That vgly shape so sore her terrifide,
 That it she shund no lesse, then dread to die,
 And her flit Palfrey did so well apply
 His nimble feet to her conceiued feare,
 That whilest his breath did strength to him supply,
 From perill free he her away did beare:
 But when his force gan faile, his pace gan wex areare.

flit Palfrey: fast horse wex areare: become slow

Which whenas she perceiu'd, she was dismayd
 At that same last extremitie full sore,
 And of her safetie greatly grew afraid;
 And now she gan approach to the sea shore,
 As it befell, that she could flie no more,
 But yield her selfe to spoile of greedinesse.
 Lightly she leaped, as a wight forlore,
 From her dull horse, in desperate distresse,
 And to her feet betooke her doubtfull sicknesse.

sore: grievous a wight forlore: a hopeless person
 sicknesse: safety

Not halfe so fast the wicked *Myrrha* fled
 From dread of her reuenging fathers hond:
 Nor halfe so fast to saue her maidenhed,
 Fled fearefull *Daphne* on th'*Ægean* strond,
 As *Florimell* fled from that Monster yond,
 To reach the sea, ere she of him were raught:
 For in the sea to drowne her selfe she fond,
 Rather then of the tyrant to be caught:
 Thereto feare gaue her wings, and neede her courage taught.

ere: before raught: reached

It fortun'd (high God did so ordaine)
 As she arriued on the roring shore,
 In minde to leape into the mighty maine,
 A little boate lay houing her before,
 In which there slept a fisher old and pore,
 The whiles his nets were drying on the sand:
 Into the same she leapt, and with the ore
 Did thrust the shallop from the floting strand:
 So safetie found at sea, which she found not at land.

maine: ocean shallop: boast strand: beach

The Monster ready on the pray to sease,
 Was of his forward hope deceiued quight;
 Ne durst assay to wade the perlous seas,
 But greedily long gaping at the sight,
 At last in vaine was forst to turne his flight,
 And tell the idle tidings to his Dame:
 Yet to auenge his deuilish despight,
 He set vpon her Palfrey tired lame,
 And slew him cruelly, ere any reskew came.

durst assay: dared try idle tidings: futile news ere: before

And after hauing him embowelled,
 To fill his hellish gorge, it chaunst a knight
 To passe that way, as forth he trauelled;
 It was a goodly Swaine, and of great might,
 As euer man that bloody field did fight;
 But in vaine sheows, that wont yongknights bewitch,
 And courtly seruices tooke no delight,
 But rather ioyd to be, then seemen sich:
 For both to be and seeme to him was labour lich.

gorge: throat swaine: young men wont: used
 line 8: he preferred to be than to seem such lich: alike, similar

It was to weete the good Sir *Satyrane*,
 That raungd abroad to seeke aduentures wilde,
 As was his wont in forrest, and in plaine;
 He was all armd in rugged steele vnfilde,
 As in the smoky forge it was compilde,
 And in his Scutchin bore a Satyres hed:
 He comming present, where the Monster wilde
 Vpon that milke-white Palfreyes carkas fed,
 Vnto his reskew ran, and greedily him sped.

to weete: namely his wont: his habit Scutchin: shield
 a Satyre: half man/half goat greedily: eagerly

There well perceiu'd he, that it was the horse,
 Whereon faire *Florimell* was wont to ride,
 That of that feend was rent without remorse:
 Much feared he, least ought did ill betide
 To that faire Mayd, the flowre of womens pride;
 For her he dearely loued, and in all
 His famous conquests highly magnifide:
 Besides her golden girdle, which did fall
 From her in flight, he found, that did him sore apall.

wont: accustomed rent: ripped up
 least ought did ill betide: lest something bad happened
 girdle: belt sore apall: grievously dismay

Full of sad feare, and doubtfull agony,
 Fiercely he flew vpon that wicked feend,
 And with huge strokes, and cruell battery
 Him forst to leaue his pray, for to attend
 Him selfe from deadly daunger to defend:
 Full many wounds in his corrupted flesh
 He did engraue, and muchell bloud did spend,
 Yet might not do him dye, but aye more fresh
 And fierce he still appeared, the more he did him thresh.

aye: always

He wist not, how him to despoile of life,
 Ne how to win the wished victory,
 Sith him he saw still stronger grow through strife,
 And him selfe weaker through infirmity;
 Greatly he grew enrag'd, and furiously
 Hurling his sword away, he lightly lept
 Vpon the beast, that with great cruelty
 Rored, and raged to be vnder-kept:
 Yet he perforce him held, and strokes vpon him hept.

wist: knew Ne: nor Sith: since perforce: of necessity

As he that striues to stop a suddein flood,
 And in strong banckes his violence enclose,
 Forceth it swell about his wonted mood,
 And largely ouerflow the fruitfull plaine,
 That all the countrey seemes to be a Maine,
 And the rich furrowes flote, all quite fordonne:
 The wofull husbandman doth lowd complaine,
 To see his whole yeares labour lost so soone,
 For which to God he made so many an idle boone.

wonted: accustomed maine: ocean fordonne: ruined
 husbandmen: farmer an idle boone: a futile prayer

So him he held, and did through might amate:
 So long he held him, and him bet so long,
 That at the last his fiercenesse gan abate,
 And meekely stoup vnto the victour strong:
 Who to auenge the implacable wrong,
 Which he supposed donne to *Florimell*,
 Sought by all meanes his dolour to prolong,
 Sith dint of steele his carcas could not quell:
 His maker with her charmes had framed him so well.

amate: subdue bet: beat dolour: sorrow
 sith dint of steel: since steel blows quell: kill

The golden ribband, which that virgin wore
 About her sclender wast, he tooke in hand,
 And with it bound the beast, that lowd did rore
 For great despight of that vnwonted band,
 Yet dared not his victour to withstand,
 But trembled like a lambe, fled from the pray,
 And all the way him followd on the strand,
 As he had long bene learned to obay;
 Yet neuer learned he such seruice, till that day.

despight: anger vnwonted: unaccustomed

Thus as he led the Beast along the way,
 He spide far off a mighty Giauntesse,
 Fast flying on a Courser dapled gray,
 From a bold knight, that with great hardinesse
 Her hard pursewd, and sought for to suppress;
 She bore before her lap a dolefull Squire,
 Lying athwart her horse in great distresse,
 Fast bounden hand and foote with cords of wire,
 Whom she did meane to make the thrall of her desire.

Courser: horse hardinesse: bravery suppress: overcome
 dolefull: sad athwart: across thrall: slave

Which whenas *Satyrane* beheld, in hast
 He left his captiue Beast at liberty,
 And crost the nearest way, by which he cast
 Her to encounter, ere she passed by:
 But she the way shund nathemore for thy,
 But forward gallopt fast; which when he spyde,
 His mighty speare he couched warily,
 And at her ran: she hauing him descryde,
 Her selfe to fight adress, and threw her lode aside.

ere: before descryde: seen
 line 5: but she avoided him neverthemore therefore

Like as a Goshauke, that in foote doth beare
 A trembling Culuer, hauing spide on hight
 An Egle, that with plumy wings doth sheare
 The subtile ayre, stouping with all his might,
 The quarrey throwes to ground with fell despight,
 And to the battell doth her selfe prepare:
 So ran the Geauntesse vnto the fight;
 Her firie eyes with furious sparkes did stare,
 And with blasphemous bannes high God in peeces tare.

Godshauke: type of hawk Culuer: dove stouping: plunging
 fell despight: deadly anger bannes: curses, oaths

She caught in hand an huge great yron mace,
 Wherewith she many had of life deprived,
 But ere the stroke could seize his ayred place,
 His speare amids her sun-broad shield arriued;
 Yet nathemore the steele a sunder riued,
 All were the beame in bignesse like a mast,
 Ne her out of the stedfast saddle driued,
 But glauncing on the tempred mettall, brast
 In thousand shiuers, and so forth beside her past.

mace: scepter, ceremonial staff ere: before
 line 5: yet nevertheless the steel broke into pieces brast: broke

Her Steed did stagger with that puissaunt strooke;
 But she no more was moued with that might,
 Then it had lighted on an aged Oke;
 Or on the marble Pillour, that is pight
 Vpon the top of Mount *Olympus* hight,
 For the braue youthly Champions to assay,
 With burning charet wheeles it nigh to smite:
 But who that smites it, mars his ioyous play,
 And is the spectacle of ruinous decay.

Steed: horse puissaunt: powerful pight: placed
 charet: chariot it nigh to smite: to come close to hitting it

Yet therewith sore enrag'd, with sterne regard
 Her dreadfull weapon she to him adrest,
 Which on his helmet martelled so hard,
 That made him low incline his lofty crest,
 And bowd his battred visour to his brest:
 Wherewith he was so stund, that he n'ote ryde,
 But reeled to and fro from East to West:
 Which when his cruell enemy espyde,
 She lightly vnto him adioyned side to syde;

sore: very martelled: hammered n'ote ryde: might not ride

And on his collar laying puissant hand,
 Out of his wauering seat him pluckt perforce,
 Perforce him pluckt, vnable to withstand,
 Or helpe himselfe, and laying thwart her horse,
 In loathly wise like to a carion corse,
 She bore him fast away. Which when the knight,
 That her pursewed, saw with great remorse,
 He neare was touched in his noble spright,
 And gan encrease his speed, as she encreast her flight.

perforce: of necessity thwart: across loathly: repulsive
 carion corse: decaying corpse

Whom when as nigh approaching she espyde,
 She threw away her burden angrily;
 For she list not the battell to abide,
 But made her selfe more light, away to fly:
 Yet her the hardy knight pursewd so nye,
 That almost in the backe he oft her strake:
 But still when him at hand she did espy,
 She turnd, and semblaunce of faire fight did make;
 But when he stayd, to flight againe she did her take.

nigh/nye: near list: wanted abide: withstand

By this the good Sir *Satyrane* gan wake
 Out of his dreame, that did him long entraunce,
 And seeing none in place, he gan to make
 Exceeding mone, and curst that cruell chaunce,
 Which reft from him so faire a cheuisaunce:
 At length he spide, whereas that wofull Squire,
 Whom he had reskewed from captiuaunce
 Of his strong foe, lay tumbled in the myre,
 Vnable to arise, or foot or hand to styre.

reft: cut him off cheuisaunce: undertaking myre: muck

To whom approaching, well he mote perceiue
 In that foule plight a comely personage,
 And louely face, made fit for to deceiue
 Fraile Ladies hart with loues consuming rage,
 Now in the blossome of his freshest age:
 He reard him vp, and loosd his yron bands,
 And after gan inquire his parentage,
 And how he fell into that Gyaunts hands,
 And who that was, which chaced her along the lands.

mote: might gan: began

Then trembling yet through feare, the Squire bespake,
 That Geauntesse *Argante* is behight,
 A daughter of the *Titans* which did make
 Warre against heauen, and heaped hills on hight,
 To scale the skyes, and put *Ioue* from his right:
 Her sire *Typhoeus* was, who mad through merth,
 And drunke with bloud of men, slaine by his might,
 Through incest, her of his owne mother Earth
 Whilome begot, being but halfe twin of that berth.

behight: named sire: father mirth: mirth, revelling
 Whilome: formerly

For at that berth another Babe she bore,
 To weet the mighty *Ollyphant*, that wrought
 Great wreake to many errant knights of yore,
 And many hath to foule confusion brought.
 These twinnes, men say, (a thing far passing thought)
 Whiles in their mothers wombe enclosed they were,
 Ere they into the lightsome world were brought,
 In fleshly lust were mingled both yfere,
 And in that monstrous wise did to the world appere.

To weet: namely errant knights of yore: wandering knights in the
 past ere: before yfere: together

So liu'd they euer after in like sin,
 Gainst natures law, and good behaiouere:
 But greatest shame was to that maiden twin,
 Who not content so fowly to deuoure
 Her natiue flesh, and staine her brothers bowre,
 Did wallow in all other fleshly myre,
 And suffred beasts her body to deflowre:
 So whot she burned in that lustfull fyre,
 Yet all that might not slake her sensuall desyre.

bowre: bedroom fleshly myre: sensual muck slake: lessen

But ouer all the countrey she did raunge,
 To seeke young men, to quench her flaming thurst,
 And feed her fancy with delightfull change:
 Whom so she fittest finds to serue her lust,
 Through her maine strength, in which she most doth trust,
 She with her brings into a secret Ile,
 Where in eternall bondage dye he must,
 Or be the vassall of her pleasures vile,
 And in all shamefull sort him selfe with her defile.

her fancy: her desires Ile: island vassal: slave defile: debase

Me seely wretch she so at vantage caught,
 After she long in waite for me did lye,
 And meant vnto her prison to haue brought,
 Her lothsome pleasure there to satisfye;
 That thousand deathes me leuer were to dye,
 Then breake the vow, that to faire *Columbell*
 I plighted haue, and yet keepe stedfastly:
 As for my name, it mistreth not to tell;
 Call me the *Squyre of Dames* that me beseemeth well.

seely: simple, innocent me leuer were: I'd rather Then: than
 plighted: pledged mistreth: signifies, matters
 me beseemeth well: suits me well

But that bold knight, whom ye pursuing saw
 That Geantesse, is not such, as she seemed,
 But a faire virgin, that in martiall law,
 And deedes of armes about all Dames is deemed,
 And about many knights is eke esteemed,
 For her great worth; she *Palladine* is hight:
 She you from death, you me from dread redeemed.
 Ne any may that Monster match in fight,
 But she, or such as she, that is so chaste a wight.

deemed: thought eke: also hight: named wight: person

Her well beseemes that Quest (quoth *Satyrane*)
 But read, thou *Squyre of Dames*, what vow is this,
 Which thou vpon thy selfe hast lately ta'ne?
 That shall I you recount (quoth he) ywis,
 So be ye pleasd to pardon all amis.
 That gentle Lady, whom I loue and serue,
 After long suit and weary seruicis,
 Did aske me, how I could her loue deserue,
 And how she might be sure, that I would neuer swerue.

beseemes: fits read: tell
 recount (quoth he) ywis: tell (he said) truly amis: wrongs

I glad by any meanes her grace to gaine,
 Bad her commaund my life to saue, or spill.
 Eftsoones she bad me, with incessaunt paine
 To wander through the world abroad at will,
 And euery where, where with my power or skill
 I might do seruice vnto gentle Dames,
 That I the same should faithfully fulfill,
 And at the twelue monethes end should bring their names
 And pledges; as the spoiles of my victorious games.

Bad: told Eftsoones: soon

So well I to faire Ladies seruice did,
 And found such fauour in their louing hartes,
 That ere the yeare his course had compassid,
 Three hundred pledges for my good desartes,
 And thrise three hundred thanks for my good partes
 I with me brought, and did to her present:
 Which when she saw, more bent to eke my smartes,
 Then to reward my trusty true intent,
 She gan for me deuise a grieuous punishment.

ere: before thrise: three times
 eke my smartes: increase my pains gan: began

To weet, that I my trauell should resume,
 And with like labour walke the world around,
 Ne euer to her presence should presume,
 Till I so many other Dames had found,
 The which, for all the suit I could propound,
 Would me refuse their pledges to afford,
 But did abide for euer chaste and sound.
 Ah gentle Squire (quoth he) tell at one word,
 How many foundst thou such to put in thy record?

To weet: namely their pledges: their promises of love
 abide: remain

In deed Sir knight (said he) one word may tell
 All, that I euer found so wisely stayd;
 For onely three they were disposd so well,
 And yet three yeares I now abroad haue strayd,
 To find them out. Mote I (then laughing sayd
 The knight) inquire of thee, what were those three,
 The which thy proffred curtesie denyd?
 Or ill they seemed sure auizd to bee,
 Or brutishly brought vp, that neu'r did fashions see.

The first which then refused me (said hee)
 Certes was but a common Courtisane,
 Yet flat refusd to haue a do with mee,
 Because I could not giue her many a Iane.
 (Thereat full hartely laughed *Satyrane*.)
 The second was an holy Nunne to chose,
 Which would not let me be her Chappellane,
 Because she knew, she said, I would disclose
 Her counsell, if she should her trust in me repose.

Certes: certainly Iane: coin
 Chappellane: person to hear her confession

The third a Damzell was of low degree,
 Whom I in countrey cottage found by chaunce;
 Full little weened I, that chastitee
 Had lodging in so meane a maintenaunce,
 Yet was she faire, and in her countenance
 Dwelt simple truth in seemely fashion.
 Long thus I woo'd her with dew obseruance,
 In hope vnto my pleasure to haue won;
 But was as farre at last, as when I first begon.

weened: knew countenaunce: face
 in seemely fashion: suitably

Safe her, I neuer any woman found,
 That chastity did for it selfe embrace,
 But were for other causes firme and sound;
 Either for want of handsome time and place,
 Or else for feare of shame and fowle disgrace.
 Thus am I hopelesse euer to attaine
 My Ladies loue, in such a desperate case,
 But all my dayes am like to wast in vaine,
 Seeking to match the chaste with th'vnchaste Ladies traine.

safe: save, except handsome: suitable

Perdy, (said *Satyrane*) thou *Squire of Dames*,
 Great labour fondly hast thou hent in hand,
 To get small thankes, and therewith many blames,
 That may emongst *Alcides* labours stand.
 Thence backe returning to the former land,
 Where late he left the Beast, he ouercame,
 He found him not; for he had broke his band,
 And was return'd againe vnto his Dame,
 To tell what tydings of faire *Florimell* became.

Perdy: truly fondly: foolishly hent: seized
 Alcides: Hercules tydings: news

Cant. VIII.

*The Witch creates a snowy Lady,
 Like to Florimell,
 Who wrongd by Carle by Proteus sau'd,
 Is sought by Paridell.*

Carle: churl, rude person

So oft as I this history record,
 My hart doth melt with meere compassion,
 To thinke, how causelesse of her owne accord
 This gentle Damzell, whom I wrote vpon,
 Should plonged be in such affliction,
 Without all hope of comfort or reliefe,
 That sure I weene, the hardest hart of stone,
 Would hardly find to aggrauate her grieffe;
 For misery craues rather mercie, then reproofe.

reproofe: reproof, shame

2

But that accursed Hag, her hostesse late,
 Had so enranckled her malicious hart,
 That she desyrd th'abridgement of her fate,
 Or long enlargement of her painefull smart.
 Now when the Beast, which by her wicked art
 Late forth she sent, she backe returning spyde,
 Tyde with her broken girdle, it a part
 Of her rich spoyles, whom he had earst destroyd,
 She weend, and wondrous gladnesse to her hart applyde.

Line 3-4: she desired to kill her or increase her pain

3

And with it running hast'ly to her sonne,
 Thought with that sight him much to haue reliued;
 Who thereby deeming sure the thing as donne,
 His former griefe with furie fresh reuiued,
 Much more then earst, and would haue algates riued
 The hart out of his brest: for sith her ded
 He surely dempt, himselfe he thought depriued
 Quite of all hope, wherewith he long had fed
 His foolish maladie, and long time had misled.

algates: altogether riued: torn dempt: thought

4

With thought whereof, exceeding mad he grew,
 And in his rage his mother would haue slaine,
 Had she not fled into a secret mew,
 Where she was wont her Sprights to entertaine
 The maisters of her art: there was she faine
 To call them all in order to her ayde,
 And them coniure vpon eternall paine,
 To counsell her so carefully dismayd,
 How she might heale her sonne, whose senses were decayd.

mew: den faine: eager

5

By their aduise, and her owne wicked wit,
 She there deuiz'd a wondrous worke to frame,
 Whose like on earth was neuer framed yit,
 That euen Nature selfe enuide the same,
 And grudg'd to see the counterfet should shame
 The thing it selfe. In hand she boldly tooke
 To make another like the former Dame,
 Another *Florimell*, in shape and looke
 So liuely and so like, that many it mistooke.

6

The substance, whereof she the bodie made,
 Was purest snow in massie mould congeald,
 Which she had gathered in a shadie glade
 Of the *Riphoean* hils, to her reueald
 By errant Sprights, but from all men conceald:
 The same she tempred with fine Mercury,
 And virgin wex, that neuer yet was seald,
 And mingled them with perfect vermily,
 That like a liuely sanguine it seem'd to the eye.

vermily: red, vermilion sanguine: blood

7

In stead of eyes two burning lampes she set
 In siluer sockets, shynig like the skyes,
 And a quicke mouing Spirit did arret
 To stirre and roll them, like a womans eyes;
 In stead of yellow lockes she did deuise,
 With golden wyre to weaue her curled head;
 Yet golden wyre was not so yellow thrise
 As *Florimells* faire haire: and in the stead
 Of life, she put a Spright to rule the carkasse dead.

8

A wicked Spright yfraught with fawning guile,
 And faire resemblance aboue all the rest,
 Which with the Prince of Darknesse fell somehow,
 From heauens blisse and euerlasting rest;
 Him needed not instruct, which way were best
 Himselfe to fashion likest *Florimell*,
 Ne how to speake, ne how to vse his gest,
 For he in counterfeisance did excell,
 And all the wyles of wemens wits knew passing well.

guile: trickery gest: demeanor
 counterfeisance: deception wyles: tricks

9

Him shaped thus, she deckt in garments gay,
 Which *Florimell* had left behind her late,
 That who so then her saw, would surely say,
 It was her selfe, whom it did imitate,
 Or fairer then her selfe, if ought algate
 Might fairer be. And then she forth her brought
 Vnto her sonne, that lay in feeble state;
 Who seeing her gan streight vpstart, and thought
 She was the Lady selfe, whom he so long had sought.

ought algate: anything altogether

Tho fast her clipping twixt his armes twaine,
 Extremely ioyed in so happie sight,
 And soone forgot his former sickly paine;
 But she, the more to seeme such as she hight,
 Coily rebutted his embracement light;
 Yet still with gentle countenance retained,
 Enough to hold a foole in vaine delight:
 Him long she so with shadowes entertained,
 As her Creatresse had in charge to her ordained.

Tho: then her clipping twixt his armes twaine: holding her
 between his two arms hight: was named
 coyly: flirtatiously countenance: face

11

Till on a day, as he disposed was
 To walke the woods with that his Idole faire,
 Her to disport, and idle time to pas,
 In th'open freshnesse of the gentle aire,
 A knight that way there chaunced to reparaire;
 Yet knight he was not, but a boastfull swaine,
 That deedes of armes had euer in despaire,
 Proud *Braggadocchio*, that in vaunting vaine
 His glory did repose, and credit did maintaine.

disport: play, sport swain: person vaunting: boasting

12

He seeing with that Chorle so faire a wight,
 Decked with many a costly ornament,
 Much merueiled thereat, as well he might,
 And thought that match a fowle disparagement:
 His bloudie speare eftsoones he boldly bent
 Against the silly clowne, who dead through feare,
 Fell streight to ground in great astonishment;
 Villein (said he) this Ladie is my deare,
 Dy, if thou it gainesay: I will away her beare.

Chorle: churl, rude person wight: person eftsoones: soon after
 silly clowne: foolish boy gainesay: contradict

13

The fearefull Chorle durst not gainesay, nor doe,
 But trembling stood, and yielded him the pray;
 Who finding litle leasure her to wooe,
 On *Tromparts* steed her mounted without stay,
 And without reskew led her quite away.
 Proud man himselfe then *Braggadocchio* deemed,
 And next to none, after that happie day,
 Being possessed of that spoyle, which seemed
 The fairest wight on ground, and most of men esteemed.

durst: dared Trompart: Braggadoccio's servant
 without stay: without hesitation deemed: thought

But when he saw himselfe free from poursute,
 He gan make gentle purpose to his Dame,
 With termes of loue and lewdnesse dissolute;
 For he could well his glozing speaches frame
 To such vaine vses, that him best became:
 But she thereto would lend but light regard,
 As seeming sory, that she euer came
 Into his powre, that vsed her so hard,
 To reauē her honor, which she more then life prefard.

glozing: deceitful (sweet-talking) reave: bereave, take away

15

Thus as they two of kindnesse treated long,
 There them by chaunce encountred on the way
 An armed knight, vpon a courser strong,
 Whose trampling feet vpon the hollow lay
 Seemed to thunder, and did nigh affray
 That Capons courage: yet he looked grim,
 And fain'd to cheare his Ladie in dismay;
 Who seem'd for feare to quake in euery lim,
 And her to saue from outrage, meekely prayed him.

lay: lea, meadow nigh affray: nearly scare away
 Capons: cowards fain'd: pretended

16

Fiercely that stranger forward came, and nigh
 Approching, with bold words and bitter threat,
 Bad that same boaster, as he mote, on high
 To leaue to him that Lady for excheat,
 Or bide him battell without further treat.
 That challenge did too peremptory seeme,
 And fild his senses with abashment great;
 Yet seeing nigh him ieopardy extreme,
 He it dissembled well, and light seem'd to esteeme.

Bad: ardued excheat: gain, profit bide: endure
 treat: discourse peremptory: bossy, commanding abashment: fear
 ieopardy: danger line 9: He pretended the threat was nothing.

17

Saying, Thou foolish knight, that weenst with words
 To steale away, that I with blowes haue wonne,
 And brought through points of many perilous swords:
 But if thee list to see thy Courser ronne,
 Or proue thy selfe, this sad encounter shonne,
 And seeke else without hazard of thy hed.
 At those proud words that other knight begonne
 To wexe exceeding wroth, and him ared
 To turne his steede about, or sure he should be ded.

weenst: thinks list: want Courser: horse shonne: shun, avoid
 To wexe exceedingly wroth: to become really mad
 ared: advised steede: horse

Sith then (said *Braggadocchio*) needes thou wilt
 Thy dayes abridge, through prooffe of puissance,
 Turne we our steedes, that both in equall tilt
 May meet againe, and each take happie chance.
 This said, they both a furlongs mountenance
 Retyrd their steeds, to ronne in euen race:
 But *Braggadocchio* with his bloudie lance
 Once hauing turnd, no more returnd his face,
 But left his loue to losse, and fled himselfe apace.

Sith...abridge: Since you insist on ending your life
 puissance: power furlong: length of a football field apace: fast

The knight him seeing fly, had no regard
 Him to poursew, but to the Ladie rode,
 And hauing her from *Trompart* lightly reard,
 Vpon his Courser set the louely lode,
 And with her fled away without abode.
 Well weened he, that fairest *Florimell*
 It was, with whom in company he yode,
 And so her selfe did alwaies to him tell;
 So made him thinke him selfe in heauen, that was in hell.

reared: taken away abode: delay weened: knew yode: went

But *Florimell* her selfe was farre away,
 Driuen to great distresse by Fortune straunge,
 And taught the carefull Mariner to play,
 Sith late mischaunce had her compeld to chaunge
 The land for sea, at randon there to raunge:
 Yet there that cruell Queene auengeresse,
 Not satisfide so farre her to estraunge
 From courtly blisse and wonted happinesse,
 Did heape on her new waues of weary wretchednesse.

Mariner: sailor sith: since
 that creull Queene auengeresse: the goddess Fortuna (Fortune)
 wonted: accustomed

For being fled into the fishers bote,
 For refuge from the Monsters crueltie,
 Long so she on the mightie maine did flote,
 And with the tide droue forward careleslie;
 For th'aire was milde, and cleared was the skie,
 And all his windes *Dan Aeolus* did keepe,
 From stirring vp their stormy enmitie,
 As pitying to see her waile and weepe;
 But all the while the fisher did securely sleepe.

maine: ocean enmitie: hatred waile: lament

At last when droncke with drowsinesse, he woke,
 And saw his drouer driue along the streame,
 He was dismayd, and thrise his breast he stroke,
 For maruell of that accident extreame;
 But when he saw that blazing beauties beame,
 Which with rare light his bote did beautifie,
 He marueild more, and thought he yet did dreame
 Not well awakt, or that some extasie
 Assotted had his sense, or dazed was his eie.

drouer: a boat thrise: three times
 assotted: befooled, beguiled, bewildered

But when her well auizing, he perceiued
 To be no vision, nor fantasticke sight,
 Great comfort of her presence he conceiued,
 And felt in his old courage new delight
 To gin awake, and stirre his frozen spright:
 Tho rudely askt her, how she thither came.
 Ah (said she) father, I note read aright,
 What hard misfortune brought me to the same;
 Yet am I glad that here I now in safety am.

auizing: viewing gin: began spright: spirit
 Tho: then note read: can't tell

But thou good man, sith farre in sea we bee,
 And the great waters gin apace to swell,
 That now no more we can the maine-land see,
 Haue care, I pray, to guide the cock-bote well,
 Least worse on sea then vs on land befell.
 Thereat th'old man did nought but fondly grin,
 And said, his boat the way could wisely tell:
 But his deceitfull eyes did neuer lin,
 To looke on her faire face, and marke her snowy skin.

cock-bote: skiff least: lest, for fear that befell: happened
 naught: nothing lin: cease

The sight whereof in his congealed flesh,
 Infixt such secret sting of greedy lust,
 That the drie withered stocke it gan refresh,
 And kindled heat, that soone in flame forth brust:
 The driest wood is soonest burnt to dust.
 Rudely to her he lept, and his rough hand
 Where ill became him, rashly would haue thrust,
 But she with angry scorne him did withstond,
 And shamefully reprov'd for his rudenesse fond.

reprov'd for his rudenesse fond: rebuked (disapproved of) for his
 foolish forwardness

But he, that neuer good nor maners knew,
 Her sharpe rebuke full litle did esteeme;
 Hard is to teach an old horse amble trew.
 The inward smoke, that did before but steeme,
 Broke into open fire and rage extreme,
 And now he strength gan adde vnto his will,
 Forcing to doe, that did him fowle misseeme:
 Beastly he threw her downe, ne car'd to spill
 Her garments gay with scales of fish, that all did fill.

rage: passion gan: began misseeme: misbecome

The silly virgin stroue him to withstand,
 All that she might, and him in vaine reuild:
 She struggled strongly both with foot and hand,
 To saue her honor from that villaine vild,
 And cride to heauen, from humane helpe exild.
 O ye braue knights, that boast this Ladies loue,
 Where be ye now, when she is nigh defild
 Of filthy wretch? well may shee you reproue
 Of falshood or of slouth, when most it may behoue.

silly: innocent, naïve reprove: accuse
 slouth: laziness behoue: be fitting

But if that thou, Sir *Satyr*, didst weete,
 Or thou, Sir *Peridure*, her sorie state,
 How soone would yee assemble many a fleete,
 To fetch from sea, that ye at land lost late;
 Towres, Cities, Kingdomes ye would ruinate,
 In your auengement and dispiteous rage,
 Ne ought your burning fury mote abate;
 But if Sir *Calidore* could it presage,
 No liuing creature could his cruelty asswage.

weete: know ought: anything mote abate: might lessen
 presage: foresee

But sith that none of all her knights is nye,
 See how the heauens of voluntary grace,
 And soueraine fauour towards chastity,
 Doe succour send to her distressed cace:
 So much high God doth innocence embrace.
 It fortun'd, whilest thus she stifly stroue,
 And the wide sea importuned long space
 With shrilling shriekes, *Proteus* abroad did roue,
 Along the fomy waues driuing his finny droue.

sith: since nye: near soccour: aid importuned: begged

Proteus is Shepheard of the seas of yore,
 And hath the charge of *Neptunes* mightie heard;
 An aged sire with head all frory hore,
 And sprinckled frost vpon his deawy beard:
 Who when those pittifull outcries he heard,
 Through all the seas so ruefully resound,
 His charet swift in haste he thither steard,
 Which with a teeme of scaly *Phocas* bound
 Was drawne vpon the waues, that fomed him around.

yore: the past hore: white charet: chariot

And comming to that Fishers wandring bote,
 That went at will, withouten carde or sayle,
 He therein saw that yrkesome sight, which smote
 Deepe indignation and compassion frayle
 Into his hart attonce: streight did he hayle
 The greedy villein from his hoped pray,
 Of which he now did very litle fayle,
 And with his staffe, that driues his Heard astray,
 Him bet so sore, that life and sense did much dismay.

carde: map smote: cause attonce: at once hayle: drag
 bet: beat

The whiles the pitteous Ladie vp did ryse,
 Ruffled and fowly raid with filthy soyle,
 And blubbred face with teares of her faire eyes:
 Her heart nigh broken was with weary toyle,
 To saue her selfe from that outrageous spoyle,
 But when she looked vp, to weet, what wight
 Had her from so infamous fact assoyld,
 For shame, but more for feare of his grim sight,
 Downe in her lap she hid her face, and loudly shrighit.

raid: covered to weet: to know wight: person
 assoyld: set free shrighit: shrieked

Her selfe not saued yet from daunger dred
 She thought, but chaung'd from one to other feare;
 Like as a fearefull Partridge, that is fled
 From the sharpe Hauke, which her attached neare,
 And fals to ground, to seeke for succour theare,
 Whereas the hungry Spaniels she does spy,
 With greedy iawes her readie for to teare;
 In such distresse and sad perplexity
 Was *Florimell*, when *Proteus* she did see thereby.

But he endeoured with speches milde
 Her to recomfort, and accourage bold,
 Bidding her feare no more her foeman vilde,
 Nor doubt himselfe; and who he was, her told.
 Yet all that could not from affright her hold,
 Ne to recomfort her at all preuayld;
 For her faint heart was with the frozen cold
 Benumbd so inly, that her wits nigh fayld,
 And all her senses with abashment quite were quayld.

endeoured: tried accourage: encourage bidding: telling
 foeman vilde: wild enemy

Her vp betwixt his rugged hands he reard,
 And with his frory lips full softly kist,
 Whiles the cold ysickles from his rough beard,
 Dropped adowne vpon her yuorie breast:
 Yet he himselfe so busily adrest,
 That her out of astonishment he wrought,
 And out of that same fishers filthy nest
 Remouing her, into his charet brought,
 And there with many gentle termes her faire besought.

adrest: applied astonishment: insensibility charet: chariot

But that old leachour, which with bold assault
 That beautie durst presume to violate,
 He cast to punish for his hainous fault;
 Then tooke he him yet trembling sith of late,
 And tyde behind his charet, to aggrate
 The virgin, whom he had abusde so sore:
 So drag'd him through the waues in scornefull state,
 And after cast him vp, vpon the shore;
 But *Florimell* with him vnto his bowre he bore.

durst: dared aggrate: to please bowre: bedroom

His bowre is in the bottome of the maine,
 Vnder a mightie rocke, gainst which do raue
 The roaring billowes in their proud disdaine,
 That with the angry working of the waue,
 Therein is eaten out an hollow caue,
 That seemes rough Masons hand with engines keene
 Had long while laboured it to engraue:
 There was his wonne, ne liuing wight was seene,
 Saue one old *Nymph*, high *Panope* to keepe it cleane.

maine: ocean wonne: house saue: except

Thither he brought the sory *Florimell*,
 And entertained her the best he might
 And *Panope* her entertaind eke well,
 As an immortall mote a mortall wight,
 To winne her liking vnto his delight:
 With flattering words he sweetly wooed her,
 And offered faire gifts t'allure her sight,
 But she both offers and the offerer
 Despysde, and all the fawning of the flatterer.

sory: sorry eke: also mote: might wight: person

Daily he tempted her with this or that,
 And neuer suffred her to be at rest:
 But euermore she him refused flat,
 And all his fained kindnesse did detest.
 So firmly she had sealed vp her breast.
 Sometimes he boasted, that a God he hight:
 But she a mortall creature loued best:
 Then he would make himselfe a mortall wight;
 But then she said she lou'd none, but a Faerie knight.

fained: pretended hight: was appointed

Then like a Faerie knight himselfe he drest;
 For euery shape on him he could endew:
 Then like a king he was to her exprest,
 And offred kingdomes vnto her in vew,
 To be his Lemman and his Ladie trew:
 But when all this he nothing saw preuaille,
 With harder meanes he cast her to subdew,
 And with sharpe threatens her often did assaile,
 So thinking for to make her stubborne courage quaille.

endew: create Lemman: lover assaile: assault

To dreadfull shapes he did himselfe transforme,
 Now like a Gyant, now like to a feend,
 Then like a Centaure, then like to a storme,
 Raging within the waues: thereby he weend
 Her will to win vnto his wished end.
 But when with feare, nor fauour, nor with all
 He else could doe, he saw himselfe esteemd,
 Downe in a Dongeon deepe he let her fall,
 And threatned there to make her his eternall thrall.

weened: thought esteemed: regarded thrall: slave

Eternall thraldome was to her more liefē,
 Then losse of chastitie, or chaunge of loue:
 Die had she rather in tormenting grieffe,
 Then any should of falsenesse her reprove,
 Or loosenesse, that she lightly did remoue.
 Most vertuous virgin, glory be thy meed,
 And crowne of heauenly praise with Saints aboue,
 Where most sweet hymmes of this thy famous deed
 Are still amongst them song, that far my rymes exceed.

liefē: dear reprove: accuse remoue: change meed: reward

Fit song of Angels caroled to bee;
 But yet what so my feeble Muse can frame,
 Shall be t'aduance thy goodly chastitee,
 And to enroll thy memorable name,
 In th'heart of euery honourable Dame,
 That they thy vertuous deedes may imitate,
 And be partakers of thy endlesse fame.
 It yrkes me, leaue thee in this wofull state,
 To tell of *Satyrane*, where I him left of late.

Who hauing ended with that *Squire of Dames*
 A long discourse of his aduentures vaine,
 The which himselfe, then Ladies more defames,
 And finding not th'*Hyena* to be slaine,
 With that same *Squyre*, returned backe againe
 To his first way. And as they forward went,
 They spyde a knight faire pricking on the plaine,
 As if he were on some aduenture bent,
 And in his port appeared manly hardiment.

then: than pricking: riding port: bearing, demeanor
 hardiment: bravery

Sir *Satyrane* him towards did adresse,
 To weet, what wight he was, and what his quest:
 And comming nigh, eftsoones he gan to gesse
 Both by the burning hart, which on his brest
 He bare, and by the colours in his crest,
 That *Paridell* it was. Tho to him yode,
 And him saluting, as beseemed best,
 Gan first inquire of tydings farre abrode;
 And afterwarde, on what aduenture now he rode.

to weet: to know tho: then yode: rode Gan: began
 tydings: news

Who thereto answering, said; the tydings bad,
 Which now in Faerie court all men do tell,
 Which turned hath great mirth, to mourning sad,
 Is the late ruine of proud *Marinell*,
 And suddein parture of faire *Florimell*,
 To find him forth: and after her are gone
 All the braue knights, that doen in armes excell,
 To saueguard her, ywandred all alone;
 Amongst the rest my lot (vnworthy) is to be one.

mirth: happiness parture: departure my lot: my fortune, role in life

Ah gentle knight (said then Sir *Satyrane*)
 Thy labour all is lost, I greatly dread,
 That hast a thanklesse seruice on thee ta'ne,
 And offrest sacrifice vnto the dead:
 For dead, I surely doubt, thou maist aread
 Henceforth for euer *Florimell* to be.
 That all the noble knights of *Maydenhead*,
 Which her ador'd, may sore repent with me,
 And all faire Ladies may for euer sory be.

aread: tell sore: greivously

Which words when *Paridell* had heard, his hew
 Gan greatly change, and seem'd dismayd to bee;
 Then said, Faire Sir, how may I weene it trew,
 That ye doe tell in such vncertaintee?
 Or speake ye of report, or did ye see
 Iust cause of dread, that makes ye doubt so sore?
 For perdie else how mote it euer bee,
 That euer hand should dare for to engore
 Her noble bloud? the heauens such crueltie abhore.

hew: color weene: know perdie: truly mote: might

These eyes did see, that they will euer rew
 T'haue seene, (quoth he) when as a monstrous beast
 The Palfrey, whereon she did trauell, slew,
 And of his bowels made his bloudie feast:
 Which speaking token sheweth at the least
 Her certaine losse, if not her sure decay:
 Besides, that more suspition encreast,
 I found her golden girdle cast astray,
 Distaynd with durt and bloud, as relique of the pray.

rew: regret Palrey: horse girdle: belt

Aye me, (said *Paridell*) the signes be sad,
 And but God turne the same to good soothsay,
 That Ladies safetie is sore to be drad:
 Yet will I not forsake my forward way,
 Till triall doe more certaine truth bewray.
 Faire Sir (quoth he) well may it you succeed,
 Ne long shall *Satyrane* behind you stay,
 But to the rest, which in this Quest proceed
 My labour adde, and be partaker of their speed.

soothsay: omen sore: grievously bewray: reveal

Ye noble knights (said then the *Squire of Dames*)
 Well may ye speed in so praiseworthy paine:
 But sith the Sunne now ginnes to slake his beames,
 In deawy vapours of the westerne maine,
 And lose the teme out of his weary waine,
 Mote not mislike you also to abate
 Your zealous hast, till morrow next againe
 Both light of heauen, and strength of men relate:
 Which if ye please, to yonder castle turne your gate.

sith: since slake: slack, diminish maine: ocean
 waine: chariot mote: might abate: decrease

That counsell pleased well; so all yfere
 Forth marched to a Castle them before,
 Where soone arriuing, they restrained were
 Of readie entrance, which ought euermore
 To errant knights be comun: wondrous sore
 Thereat displeasd they were, till that young Squire
 Gan them informe the cause, why that same dore
 Was shut to all, which lodging did desire:
 The which to let you weet, will further time require.

Yfere: together errant: wandering weet: know

Cant. IX.

*Malbecco will no straunge knights host,
 For peeuish gealositie:
 Paridell giusts with Britomart:
 Both shew their auncestrie.*

giusts: jousts

REdoubted knights, and honorable Dames,
 To whom I leuell all my labours end,
 Right sore I feare, least with vnworthy blames
 This odious argument my rimes should shend,
 Or ought your goodly patience offend,
 Whiles of a wanton Lady I do write,
 Which with her loose incontinence doth blend
 The shyning glory of your soueraigne light,
 And knighthood fowle defaced by a faithlesse knight.

Redoubted: doughty, brave right sore: very much shend: disgrace
 her loose incontinence doth blend: her sluttish behavior blemishes

But neuer let th'ensample of the bad
 Offend the good: for good by paragone
 Of euill, may more notably be rad,
 As white seemes fairer, macht with blacke attone;
 Ne all are shamed by the fault of one;
 For lo in heauen, whereas all goodnesse is,
 Emongst the Angels, a whole legione
 Of wicked Sprights did fall from happy blis;
 What wonder then, if one of women all did mis?

paragon: comparison rad: told, perceived
 attone: together legione: army mis: wrong

Then listen Lordings, if ye list to weet
 The cause, why *Satyrane* and *Paridell*
 Mote not be entertaynd, as seemed meet,
 Into that Castle (as that Squire does tell.)
 Therein a cancred crabbed Carle does dwell,
 That has no skill of Court nor courtesie,
 Ne cares, what men say of him ill or well;
 For all his dayes he drownes in priuitie,
 Yet has full large to liue, and spend at libertie.

ye list to weet: you want to know meet: fitting
 cancred crabbed Carle: malignant, grouchy, brutish man
 priuitie: seclusion line 9: Yet has large means and wealth

But all his mind is set on mucky pelfe,
 To hoord vp heapes of euill gotten masse,
 For which he others wrongs, and wreckes himselfe;
 Yet is he lincked to a louely lasse,
 Whose beauty doth her bounty far surpasse,
 The which to him both far vnequall yeares,
 And also far vnlike conditions has;
 For she does ioy to play emongst her peares,
 And to be free from hard restraint and gealous feares.

pelfe: lucre, money masse: wealth bounty: virtue
 peares: equals

But he is old, and withered like hay,
 Vnfit faire Ladies seruice to supply;
 The priuie guilt whereof makes him alway
 Suspect her truth, and keepe continuall spy
 Vpon her with his other blinkted eye;
 Ne suffreth he resort of liuing wight
 Approach to her, ne keepe her company,
 But in close bowre her mewes from all mens sight,
 Depriu'd of kindly ioy and naturall delight.

priuie: hidden, secret blinkted: dim suffreth: allows
 bowre: bedroom her mewes: pens her up

Malbecco he, and *Hellenore* she hight,
 Vnfitly yokt together in one teeme,
 That is the cause, why neuer any knight
 Is suffred here to enter, but he seeme
 Such, as no doubt of him he neede misdeeme.
 Thereat Sir *Satyrane* gan smile, and say;
 Extremely mad the man I surely deeme,
 That weenes with watch and hard restraint to stay
 A womans will, which is disposd to go astray.

Misdeeme: suspect mad: crazed deeme: think
 weenes: supposes stay: restrain

In vaine he feares that, which he cannot shonne:
 For who wotes not, that womans subtiltyes
 Can guilen *Argus*, when she list misdonne?
 It is not yron bandes, nor hundred eyes,
 Nor brasen walls, nor many wakefull spyes,
 That can withhold her wilfull wandring feet;
 But fast good will with gentle curtesyes,
 And timely seruice to her pleasures meet
 May her perhaps containe, that else would algates fleet.

shone: shun, prevent lines 2-3: For who knows not, that
 woman's subtlety can trick *Argus* [of the 100 eyes], when she wants
 to misbehave? brazen: brass meet: fitting
 algate fleet: altogether fly

Then is he not more mad (said *Paridell*)
 That hath himselfe vnto such seruice sold,
 In dolefull thraldome all his dayes to dwell?
 For sure a foole I do him firmly hold,
 That loues his fetters, though they were of gold.
 But why do we deuise of others ill,
 Whiles thus we suffer this same dotard old,
 To keepe vs out, in scorne of his owne will,
 And rather do not ransack all, and him selfe kill?

Dolefull thraldome: sad slavery fetters: chains dotard: old man

Nay let vs first (said *Satyrane*[]) entreat
 The man by gentle meanes, to let vs in,
 And afterwarde affray with cruell threat,
 Ere that we to efforce it do begin:
 Then if all fayle, we will by force it win,
 And eke reward the wretch for his mesprise,
 As may be worthy of his haynous sin.
 That counsell pleasd: then *Paridell* did rise,
 And to the Castle gate approacht in quiet wise.

entreat: request affray: scare Ere: Before
 eke: also mesprise: insolence haynous: heinous, hateful

Whereat soft knocking, entrance he desyrd.
 The good man selfe, which then the Porter playd,
 Him answered, that all were now retyrd
 Vnto their rest, and all the keyes conuayd
 Vnto their maister, who in bed was layd,
 That none him durst awake out of his dreame;
 And therefore them of patience gently prayd.
 Then *Paridell* began to chaunge his theme,
 And threatned him with force & punishment extreme.

durst: dared

But all in vaine; for nought mote him relent,
 And now so long before the wicket fast
 They wayted, that the night was forward spent,
 And the faire welkin fowly ouercast,
 Gan blowen vp a bitter stormy blast,
 With shoure and hayle so horrible and dred,
 That this faire many were compeld at last,
 To fly for succour to a little shed,
 The which beside the gate for swine was ordered.

Nought mote: nothing might wicket fast: closed gate
 welkin: sky succour: protection, comfort

It fortun'd, soone after they were gone,
 Another knight, whom tempest thither brought,
 Came to that Castle, and with earnest mone,
 Like as the rest, late entrance deare besought;
 But like so as the rest he prayd for nought,
 For flatly he of entrance was refusd,
 Sorely thereat he was displeas'd, and thought
 How to auenge himselfe so sore abusd,
 And euermore the Carle of curtesie accusd.

tempest: storm besought: requested Carle: brutish man

But to auoyde th'intollerable stowre,
 He was compeld to seeke some refuge neare,
 And to that shed, to shrowd him from the showre,
 He came, which full of guests he found whyleare,
 So as he was not let to enter there:
 Whereat he gan to wex exceeding wroth,
 And swore, that he would lodge with them yfere,
 Or them dislodge, all were they liefe or loth;
 And so defide them each, and so defide them both.

stowre: disturbance, danger whyleare: already
 to wex exceedingly wroth: to become really mad yfere: together
 all were they liefe or loth: whether they were willing or not

Both were full loth to leaue that needfull tent,
 And both full loth in darkenesse to debate;
 Yet both full liefe him lodging to haue lent,
 And both full liefe his boasting to abate;
 But chiefly *Paridell* his hart did grate,
 To heare him threaten so despightfully.
 As if he did a dogge to kenell rate,
 That durst not barke; and rather had he dy,
 Then when he was defide, in coward corner ly.

loth: unwilling, reluctant tent: shed to debate: to contend, fight
 liefe: eager rate: scold durst: dared

Tho hastily remounting to his steed,
 He forth issew'd; like as a boistrous wind,
 Which in th'earthes hollow caues hath long bin hid,
 And shut vp fast within her prisons blind,
 Makes the huge element against her kind
 To moue, and tremble as it were agast,
 Vntill that it an issew forth may find;
 Then forth it breakes, and with his furious blast
 Confounds both land & seas, and skyes doth ouercast.

Tho: then blind: dark

Their steel-hed speares they strongly coucht, and met
 Together with impetuous rage and forse,
 That with the terrour of their fierce affret,
 They rudely droue to ground both man and horse,
 That each awhile lay like a sencelesse corse.
 But *Paridell* sore brused with the blow,
 Could not arise, the counterchaunge to scorse,
 Till that young Squire him reared from below;
 Then drew he his bright sword, & gan about him throw.

affret: encounter corse: corpse sore: grievously
 the counterchange to scorse: to strike back and thus requite the blow
 reared: raised

But *Satyrane* forth stepping, did them stay
 And with faire treatie pacifide their ire,
 Then when they were accorded from the fray,
 Against that Castles Lord they gan conspire,
 To heape on him dew vengeaunce for his hire.
 They bene agreed, and to the gates they goe
 To burne the same with vnquenchable fire,
 And that vncurteous Carle their commune foe
 To do fowle death to dye, or wrap in grieuous woe.

stay: hold up, stop ire: anger fray: fight, row
 Carle: boorish man

Malbecco seeing them resolu'd in deed
 To flame the gates, and hearing them to call
 For fire in earnest, ran with fearefull speed,
 And to them calling from the castle wall,
 Besought them humbly, him to beare withal,
 As ignoraunt of seruants bad abuse,
 And slacke attendaunce vnto straungers call.
 The knights were willing all things to excuse,
 Though nought beleu'd, & entrance late did not refuse.

They bene ybrought into a comely bowre,
 And seru'd of all things that mote needfull bee;
 Yet secretly their hoste did on them lowre,
 And welcomde more for feare, then charitee;
 But they dissembled, what they did not see,
 And welcomed themselues. Each gan vndight
 Their garments wet, and weary armour free,
 To dry them selues by *Vulcanes* flaming light,
 And eke their lately brused parts to bring in plight.

comely bowre: lovely bedroom lowre: frown
 line 5: They pretended not to notice his discourtesy.
 undight: take off Vulcan: Blacksmith of the Gods
 eke: also plight: health

And eke that straunger knight emongst the rest;
 Was for like need enforst to disaray:
 Tho whenas vailed was her loftie crest,
 Her golden locks, that were in tramels gay
 Vpbounden, did them selues adowne display,
 And raught vnto her heeles; like sunny beames,
 That in a cloud their light did long time stay,
 Their vapour vaded, shew their golden gleames,
 And through the persant aire shoote forth their azure streames.

vailed: lowered tramels: plaits raught: reached
 vaded: vanished persant: piercing

She also dofte her heauy haberieon,
 Which the faire feature of her limbs did hyde,
 And her well plighted frock, which she did won
 To tucke about her short, when she did ryde,
 She low let fall, that flowd from her lanck syde
 Downe to her foot, with carelesse modestee.
 Then of them all she plainly was espyde,
 To be a woman wight, vnwist to bee,
 The fairest woman wight, that euer eye did see.

dofte: took off haberieon: coat of mail plighted: folded
 did won: used, accustomed unwist: unknown

Like as *Minerua*, being late returnd
 From slaughter of the Giaunts conquered;
 Where proud *Encelade*, whose wide nosethrills burnd
 With breathed flames, like to a furnace red,
 Transfixed with the speare, downe tumbled ded
 From top of *Hemus*, by him heaped hye;
 Hath loosd her helmet from her lofty hed,
 And her *Gorgonian* shield gins to vnty
 From her left arme, to rest in glorious victorye.

Which whenas they beheld, they smitten were
 With great amazement of so wondrous sight,
 And each on other, and they all on her
 Stood gazing, as if suddein great affright
 Had them surprised. At last auizing right,
 Her goodly personage and glorious hew,
 Which they so much mistooke, they tooke delight
 In their first errour, and yet still anew
 With wonder of her beauty fed their hungry vew.

smitten: hit auizing: perceiving

Yet note their hungry vew be satisfide,
 But seeing still the more desir'd to see,
 And euer firmly fixed did abide
 In contemplation of diuinitie:
 But most they meruail[e]d at her cheualree,
 And noble prowesse, which they had approued,
 That much they faynd to know, who she mote bee;
 Yet none of all them her thereof amoued,
 Yet eury one her likte, and eury one her loued.

note: might not abide: remain cheualree, / And noble
 prowess: chivalry and noble bravery faynd: were eager
 mote: might amoued: asked

And *Paridell* though partly discontent
 With his late fall, and fowle indignity,
 Yet was soone wonne his malice to relent,
 Through gracious regard of her faire eye,
 And knightly worth, which he too late did try,
 Yet tried did adore. Supper was dight;
 Then they *Malbecco* prayd of curtesy,
 That of his Lady they might haue the sight,
 And company at meat, to do them more delight.

dight: set out

But he to shift their curious request,
 Gan causen, why she could not come in place;
 Her crased health, her late recourse to rest,
 And humid euening ill for sicke folkes cace:
 But none of those excuses could take place;
 Ne would they eate, till she in presence came.
 She came in presence with right comely grace,
 And fairely them saluted, as became,
 And shewd her selfe in all a gentle curteous Dame.

They sate to meat, and *Satyrane* his chaunce
 Was her before, and *Paridell* besyde;
 But he him selfe sate looking still askaunce,
 Gainst *Britomart*, and euer closely eyde
 Sir *Satyrane*, that glaunces might not glyde:
 But his blind eye, that syded *Paridell*,
 All his demeanure from his sight did hyde:
 On her faire face so did he feede his fill,
 And sent close messages of loue to her at will.

askaunce: sidewise demeanure: behavior

And euer and anone, when none was ware,
 With speaking lookes, that close embassage bore,
 He rou'd at her, and told his secret care:
 For all that art he learned had of yore.
 Ne was she ignoraunt of that lewd lore,
 But in his eye his meaning wisely red,
 And with the like him answerd euermore:
 She sent at him one firie dart, whose hed
 Empoisoned was with priuy lust, and gealous dred.

embassage: message rou'd: darted
 all that art: the game of love priuy: secret

He from that deadly throw made no defence,
 But to the wound his weake hart opened wyde;
 The wicked engine through false influence,
 Past through his eyes, and secretly did glyde
 Into his hart, which it did sorely gryde.
 But nothing new to him was that same paine,
 Ne paine at all; for he so oft had tryde
 The powre thereof, and lou'd so oft in vaine,
 That thing of course he counted, loue to entertaine.

gryde: pierced

Thenceforth to her he sought to intimate
 His inward griefe, by meanes to him well knowne,
 Now *Bacchus* fruit out of the siluer plate
 He on the table dasht, as ouerthrowne,
 Or of the fruitfull liquor ouerflowne,
 And by the dauncing bubbles did diuine,
 Or therein write to let his loue be showne;
 Which well she red out of the learned line,
 A sacrament prophane in mistery of wine.

Bacchus: God of wine plate: cup

And when so of his hand the pledge she raught,
 The guilty cup she fained to mistake,
 And in her lap did shed her idle draught,
 Shewing desire her inward flame to slake:
 By such close signes they secret way did make
 Vnto their wils, and one eyes watch escape;
 Two eyes him needeth, for to watch and wake,
 Who louers will deceiue. Thus was the ape,
 By their faire handling, put into *Malbeccoes* cape.

raught: took fained: pretended slake: relieve
 one eyes watch escape: avoid the sight of Malbecco's one eye
 line 8-9: Thus Malbecco was made a fool (ape) of.

Now when of meats and drinks they had their fill,
 Purpose was moued by that gentle Dame,
 Vnto those knights aduenturous, to tell
 Of deeds of armes, which vnto them became,
 And euery one his kindred, and his name.
 Then *Paridell*, in whom a kindly pryde
 Of gracious speach, and skill his words to frame
 Abounded, being glad of so fit tyde
 Him to commend to her, thus spake, of all well eyde.

tyde: occasion

Troy, that art now nought, but an idle name,
 And in thine ashes buried low dost lie,
 Though whilome far much greater then thy fame,
 Before that angry Gods, and cruell skye
 Vpon thee heapt a direfull destinie,
 What boots it boast thy glorious descent,
 And fetch from heauen thy great Genealogie,
 Sith all thy worthy prayses being blent,
 Their of-spring hath embaste, and later glory shent.

whilome: formerly boots: avails sith: since
 blent: stained embaste: debased, dishonored shent: disgraced

Most famous Worthy of the world, by whome
 That warre was kindled, which did *Troy* inflame,
 And stately towres of *Ilion* whilome
 Brought vnto balefull ruine, was by name
 Sir *Paris* far renowmd through noble fame,
 Who through great prowesse and bold hardinesse,
 From *Lacedaemon* fetcht the fairest Dame,
 That euer *Greece* did boast, or knight possesse,
 Whom *Venus* to him gawe for meed of worthinesse.

baleful: deadly meed: reward

Faire *Helene*, flowre of beautie excellent,
 And girlond of the mighty Conquerours,
 That madest many Ladies deare lament
 The heauie losse of their braue Paramours,
 Which they far off beheld from *Troian* toures,
 And saw the fieldes of faire *Scamander* strowne
 With carcasses of noble warrioures,
 Whose fruitlesse liues were vnder furrow sowne,
 And *Xanthus* sandy bankes with bloud all ouerflowne.

From him my linage I deriue aright,
 Who long before the ten yeares siege of *Troy*,
 Whiles yet on *Ida* he a shepheard hight,
 On faire *Oenone* got a louely boy,
 Whom for remembraunce of her passed ioy,
 She of his Father *Pariius* did name;
 Who, after *Greekes* did *Priams* realme destroy,
 Gathred the *Troian* reliques sau'd from flame,
 And with them sayling thence, to th'Isle of *Paros* came.

hight: was called

That was by him cald *Paros*, which before
 Hight *Nausa*, there he many yeares did raine,
 And built *Nausicle* by the *Pontick* shore,
 The which he dying left next in remaine
 To *Paridas* his sonne.
 From whom I *Paridell* by kin descend;
 But for faire Ladies loue, and glories gaine,
 My natiue soile haue left, my dayes to spend
 In sewing deeds of armes, my liues and labours end.

Whenas the noble *Britomart* heard tell
 Of *Troian* warres, and *Priams* Citie sackt,
 The ruefull story of Sir *Paridell*,
 She was empassiond at that piteous act,
 With zelous enuy of Greekes cruell fact,
 Against that nation, from whose race of old
 She heard, that she was lineally extract:
 For noble *Britons* sprong from *Troians* bold,
 And *Troynouant* was built of old *Troyes* ashes cold.

Troynouant: New Troy, an early name for London

Then sighing soft awhile, at last she thus:
 O lamentable fall of famous towne,
 Which raignd so many yeares victorious,
 And of all *Asie* bore the soueraigne crowne,
 In one sad night consumd, and throwen downe:
 What stony hart, that heares thy haplesse fate,
 Is not empierst with deepe compassiowne,
 And makes ensample of mans wretched state,
 That floures so fresh at morne, and fades at euening late?

soueraigne: supreme haplesse: unlucky empierst: pierced

Behold, Sir, how your pitifull complaint
 Hath found another partner of your payne:
 For nothing may impresse so deare constraint,
 As countries cause, and commune foes disdayne.
 But if it should not grieue you, backe agayne
 To turne your course, I would to heare desyre,
 What to *Aeneas* fell; sith that men sayne
 He was not in the Cities wofull fyre
 Consum'd, but did him selfe to safetie retyre.

complaint: lament constraint: distress

Anchyses sonne begot of *Venus* faire,
 (Said he,) out of the flames for safegard fled,
 And with a remnant did to sea repaire,
 Where he through fattall error long was led
 Full many yeares, and weetlesse wandered
 From shore to shore, emongst the Lybicke sands,
 Ere rest he found. Much there he suffered,
 And many perils past in forreine lands,
 To saue his people sad from victours vengefull hands.

Anchyses sonne: Aeneas fattall error: fated wandering
 weetlesse: ignorantly Lybicke: Lybian Ere: Before

At last in *Latium* he did arriue,
 Where he with cruell warre was entertaind
 Of th'inland folke, which sought him backe to driue,
 Till he with old *Latinus* was constraind,
 To contract wedlock: (so the fates ordaind.)
 Wedlock contract in bloud, and eke in blood
 Accomplished, that many deare complaind:
 The riual slaine, the victour through the flood
 Escaped hardly, hardly praisd his wedlock good.

eke: also

Yet after all, he victour did suruiue,
 And with *Latinus* did the kingdome part.
 But after when both nations gan to striue,
 Into their names the title to conuart,
 His sonne *Iulus* did from thence depart,
 With all the warlike youth of *Troians* bloud,
 And in long *Alba* plast his throne apart,
 Where faire it florished, and long time it stoud,
 Till *Romulus* renewing it, to *Rome* remoud.

part: divide line 4: to claim sole power

There there (said *Britomart*) a fresh appeard
 The glory of the later world to spring,
 And *Troy* againe out of her dust was reard,
 To sit in second seat of soueraigne king,
 Of all the world vnder her gouerning.
 But a third kingdome yet is to arise,
 Out of the *Troians* scattered of-spring,
 That in all glory and great enterprise,
 Both first and second *Troy* shall dare to equalise.

It *Troynouant* is hight, that with the waues
 Of wealthy *Thamis* washed is along,
 Vpon whose stubborne neck, whereat he raues
 With roring rage, and sore him selfe does throng,
 That all men feare to tempt his billowes strong,
 She fastned hath her foot, which standes so hy,
 That it a wonder of the world is song
 In forreine landes, and all which passen by,
 Beholding it from far, do thinke it threates the skye.

Troynouant: original name for London
Thamis: the river Thames, spanned by London Bridge

The *Troian Brute* did first that Citie found,
 And Hygate made the meare thereof by West,
 And *Ouert* gate by North: that is the bound
 Toward the land; two riuers bound the rest.
 So huge a scope at first him seemed best,
 To be the compasse of his kingdomes seat:
 So huge a mind could not in lesser rest,
 Ne in small meares containe his glory great,
 That *Albion* had conquered first by warlike feat.

meare: boundary
 Albion: name for England when Brute arrived there

Ah fairest Lady knight, (said *Paridell*)
 Pardon I pray my heedlesse ouersight,
 Who had forgot, that whilome I heard tell
 From aged *Mnemon*; for my wits bene light.
 Indeed he said (if I remember right,)
 That of the antique *Troian* stocke, there grew
 Another plant, that raught to wondrous hight,
 And far abroad his mighty branches threw,
 Into the vtmost Angle of the world he knew.

heedlesse: careless
Mnemon: memory
 whilome: formerly
 raught: reached

For that same *Brute*, whom much he did aduaunce
 In all his speach, was *Syluius* his sonne,
 Whom hauing slaine, through luckles arrowes glance
 He fled for feare of that he had misdonne,
 Or else for shame, so fowle reproch to shonne,
 And with him led to sea an youthly trayne,
 Where wearie wandring they long time did wonne,
 And many fortunes prou'd in th'*Ocean* mayne,
 And great aduentures found, that now were lōg to sayne.

wonne: live
 prou'd: experienced

At last by fatall course they driuen were
 Into an Island spacious and brode,
 The furthest North, that did to them appeare:
 Which after rest they seeking far abroad,
 Found it the fittest soyle for their abode,
 Fruitfull of all things fit for liuing foode,
 But wholly wast, and void of peoples trode,
 Saue an huge nation of the Geaunts broode,
 That fed on liuing flesh, & druncke mens vitall blood.

fatall: fated
 trode: footstep
 saue: except for

Whom he through wearie wars and labours long,
 Subdewd with losse of many *Britons* bold:
 In which the great *Goemagot* of strong
Corineus, and *Coulin* of *Debon* old
 Were ouerthrowne and layd on th'earth full cold,
 Which quaked vnder their so hideous masse,
 A famous history to be enrold
 In euerlasting monuments of brasse,
 That all the antique Worthies merits far did passe.

His worke great *Troynouant*, his worke is eke
 Faire *Lincolne*, both renowned far away,
 That who from East to West will endlong seeke,
 Cannot two fairer Cities find this day,
 Except *Cleopolis*: so heard I say
 Old *Mnemon*. Therefore Sir, I greet you well
 Your cuntry kin, and you entirely pray
 Of pardon for the strife, which late befell
 Betwixt vs both vnknowne. So ended *Paridell*.

endlong: from end to end
 Cleopolis: the capital of
 Faerieland

But all the while, that he these speaches spent,
 Vpon his lips hong faire Dame *Hellenore*,
 With vigilant regard, and dew attent,
 Fashioning worlds of fancies euermore
 In her fraile wit, that now her quite forlore:
 The whiles vnwares away her wondring eye,
 And greedy eares her weake hart from her bore:
 Which he perceiuing, euer priuily
 In speaking, many false belgardes at her let fly.

attent: attention
 forlore: deserted
 priuily: secretly
 belgardes: loving looks

So long these knights discoursed diuersly,
 Of straunge affaires, and noble hardiment,
 Which they had past with mickle iopardy,
 That now the humid night was farforth spent,
 And heauenly lampes were halfendeale ybrent:
 Which th'old man seeing well, who too long thought
 Euery discourse and euery argument,
 Which by the houres he measured, besought
 Them go to rest. So all vnto their bowres were brought.

mickle jeopardy: much danger halfendeale ybrent: half consumed
 besought: asked bowres: bedrooms

Cant. X.

*Paridell rapeth Hellenore:
 Malbecco her pursewes:
 Findes emongst Satyres, whence with him
 To turne she doth refuse.*

1

The morow next, so soone as *Phoebus* Lamp
 Bewrayed had the world with early light,
 And fresh *Aurora* had the shady damp
 Out of the goodly heauen amoued quight,
 Faire *Britomart* and that same *Faerie* knight
 Vprose, forth on their iourney for to wend:
 But *Paridell* complaynd, that his late fight
 With *Britomart*, so sore did him offend,
 That ryde he could not, till his hurts he did amend.

2

So forth they far'd, but he behind them stayd,
 Maulgre his host, who grudged grievously,
 To house a guest, that would be needes obayd,
 And of his owne him left not liberty:
 Might wanting measure moueth surquedry.
 Two things he feared, but the third was death;
 That fierce young mans vnruely maistry;
 His money, which he lou'd as liuing breath;
 And his faire wife, whom honest long he kept vneath.

Maulgre: in spite line 5: Strength lacking restraint creates
 pride. vneath: with difficulty

But patience perforce he must abie,
 What fortune and his fate on him will lay,
 Fond is the feare, that findes no remedie;
 Yet warily he watcheth euery way,
 By which he feareth euill happen may:
 So th'euill thinkes by watching to preuent;
 Ne doth he suffer her, nor night, nor day,
 Out of his sight her selfe once to absent.
 So doth he punish her and eke himselfe torment.

perforce: of necessity abie: abide by Fond: foolish

4

But *Paridell* kept better watch, then hee,
 A fit occasion for his turne to find:
 False loue, why do men say, thou canst not see,
 And in their foolish fancie feigne thee blind,
 That with thy charmes the sharpest sight doest bind,
 And to thy will abuse? Thou walkest free,
 And seest euery secret of the mind;
 Thou seest all, yet none at all sees thee;
 All that is by the working of thy Deitee.

feigne: pretend

5

So perfect in that art was *Paridell*,
 That he *Malbeccoes* halfen eye did wyle,
 His halfen eye he wiled wondrous well,
 And *Hellenors* both eyes did eke beguyle,
 Both eyes and hart attonce, during the whyle
 That he there soiourned his wounds to heale;
 That *Cupid* selfe it seeing, close did smyle,
 To weet how he her loue away did steale,
 And bad, that none their ioyous treason should reueale.

halfen eye: imperfect sight wyle: trick
 eke beguyle: also trick attonce: at the same time
 soiourned: visited weet: know bad: ordered

6

The learned louer lost no time nor tyde,
 That least auantage mote to him afford,
 Yet bore so faire a saile, that none espyde
 His secret drift, till he her layd aboard.
 When so in open place, and commune bord,
 He fortun'd her to meet, with commune speach
 He courted her, yet bayted euery word,
 That his vngentle hoste n'ote him appeach
 Of vile vngentlenesse, or hospitages breach.

mote: might fortun'd: happened bayted: calculated
 n'ote him appeach: might not accuse him
 hospitages breach: conduct unbecoming to a guest, a breach of
 hospitality

But when apart (if euer her apart)
 He found, then his false engins fast he plyde,
 And all the sleights vnbosomd in his hart;
 He sigh'd, he sobd, he swownd, he perdy dyde,
 And cast himselfe on ground her fast besyde:
 Tho when againe he him bethought to liue,
 He wept, and wayld, and false laments belyde,
 Saying, but if she Mercie would him giue
 That he mote algates dye, yet did his death forgiue.

engins: wiles, tricks, sleights swound: he fainted
 perdy: truly Tho: then belyde: counterfeited
 but if: unless mote algates: might altogether
 yet did his death forgive: yet in fact gave up his resolve to die

And otherwhiles with amorous delights,
 And pleasing toyes he would her entertaine,
 Now singing sweetly, to surprise her sprights,
 Now making layes of loue and louers paine,
 Bransles, Ballads, virelayes, and verses vaine;
 Oft purposes, oft riddles he deuysd,
 And thousands like, which flowed in his braine,
 With which he fed her fancie, and entysd
 To take to his new loue, and leaue her old despysd.

layes: songs bransles: dances virelayes: love song

And euery where he might, and euery while
 He did her seruice dewtiful, and sewed
 At hand with humble pride, and pleasing guile,
 So closely yet, that none but she it vewed,
 Who well perceiued all, and all indewed.
 Thus finely did he his false nets dispred,
 With which he many weake harts had subdewed
 Of yore, and many had ylike misled:
 What wonder then, if she were likewise carried?

sewed: solicited, asked, urger indewed: put on

No fort so sensible, no wals so strong,
 But that continuall battery will riue,
 Or daily siege through dispuruayance long,
 And lacke of reskewes will to parley driue;
 And Peece, that vnto parley eare will giue,
 Will shortly yeeld it selfe, and will be made
 The vassall of the victors will byliue:
 That stratageme had oftentimes assayd
 This crafty Paramoure, and now it plaine displayd.

riue: split dispuruayance: lack of supplies
 parley: conference Peece: fortress vassal: slave
 byliue: quickly assayd: tried

For through his traines he her intrapped hath,
 That she her loue and hart hath wholly sold
 To him, without regard of gaine, or scath,
 Or care of credite, or of husband old,
 Whom she hath vow'd to dub a faire Cucquold.
 Nought wants but time and place, which shortly shee
 Deuized hath, and to her louer told.
 It pleased well. So well they both agree;
 So readie rype to ill, ill wemens counsels bee.

traines: tricks scath: harm credit: reputation
 Cucquold: man whose wife is unfaithful

Darke was the Euening, fit for louers stealth,
 When chaunst *Malbecco* busie be elsewhere,
 She to his closet went, where all his wealth
 Lay hid: thereof she countlesse summes did reare,
 The which she meant away with her to beare;
 The rest she fyr'd for sport, or for despight;
 As *Hellene*, when she saw aloft appeare
 The *Troiane* flames, and reach to heauens hight
 Did clap her hands, and ioyed at that dolefull sight.

reare: steal despight: malice doleful: sorrowful

This second *Hellene*, faire Dame *Hellenore*,
 The whiles her husband ranne with sory haste,
 To quench the flames, which she had tyn'd before,
 Laught at his foolish labour spent in waste;
 And ranne into her louers armes right fast;
 Where streight embraced, she to him did cry,
 And call aloud for helpe, ere helpe were past;
 For loe that Guest would beare her forcibly,
 And meant to rauish her, that rather had to dy.

tyn'd: kindled ere: before loe: expression of wonder or
 surprise to ravish her: to have sex with her

The wretched man hearing her call for ayd,
 And readie seeing him with her to fly,
 In his disquiet mind was much dismayd:
 But when againe he backward cast his eye,
 And saw the wicked fire so furiously
 Consume his hart, and scorch his Idoles face,
 He was therewith distressed diuersly,
 Ne wist he how to turne, nor to what place;
 Was neuer wretched man in such a wofull cace.

Ne wist: No one knew

Ay when to him she cryde, to her he turnd,
 And left the fire; loue money ouercame:
 But when he marked, how his money burnd,
 He left his wife; money did loue disclame:
 Both was he loth to loose his loued Dame,
 And loth to leaue his liefest pelfe behind,
 Yet sith he n'ote saue both, he sau'd that same,
 Which was the dearest to his donghill mind,
 The God of his desire, the ioy of misers blind.

loth: reluctant liefest: most beloved pelft: money, riches
 sith he n'ote: since he might not dunghill: dirty, shitty

Thus whilest all things in troublous vprore were,
 And all men busie to supresse the flame,
 The louing couple need no reskew feare,
 But leasure had, and libertie to frame
 Their purpost flight, free from all mens reclame;
 And Night, the patronesse of loue-stealth faire,
 Gaue them safe conduct, till to end they came:
 So bene they gone yfeare, a wanton paire
 Of louers loosely knit, where list them to repaire.

yfeare: together
 where list them to repaire: whenever they wished to go

Soone as the cruell flames yslaked were,
Malbecco seeing, how his losse did lye,
 Out of the flames, which he had quencht whylere
 Into huge waues of grieffe and gealosye
 Full deepe emplonged was, and drowned nye,
 Twixt inward doole and felonous despight;
 He rau'd, he wept, he stampt, he lowd did cry,
 And all the passions, that in man may light,
 Did him attonce oppresse, and vex his caytiue spright.

yslaked: diminished whylere: earlier doole: sorrow
 despight: malice his caytiue spright: his vile, base spirit

Long thus he chawd the cud of inward grieffe,
 And did consume his gall with anguish sore,
 Still when he mused on his late mischieffe,
 Then still the smart thereof increased more,
 And seem'd more grieuous, then it was before:
 At last when sorrow he saw booted nought,
 Ne grieffe might not his loue to him restore,
 He gan deuse, how her he reskew mought,
 Ten thousand wayes he cast in his confused thought.

mused: thought smart: pain then: than
 booted nought: accomplished nothing mought: might

At last resoluing, like a pilgrim pore,
 To sea[r]ch her forth, where so she might be fond,
 And bearing with him treasure in close store,
 The rest he leaues in ground: so takes in hond
 To seeke her endlong, both by sea and lond.
 Long he her sought, he sought her farre and nere,
 And euery where that he mote vnderstond,
 Of knights and ladies any meetings were,
 And of eachone he met, he tydings did inquere.

endlong: continuously tydings: news

But all in vaine, his woman was too wise,
 Euer to come into his clouch againe,
 And he too simple euer to surprise
 The iolly *Paridell*, for all his paine.
 One day, as he forpassed by the plaine
 With weary pace, he farre away espide
 A couple, seeming well to be his twaine,
 Which houed close vnder a forrest side,
 As if they lay in wait, or else themselues did hide.

clouch: clutch jolly: gay twaine: two houed: hovered

Well weened he, that those the same mote bee,
 And as he better did their shape auize,
 Him seemed more their manner did agree;
 For th'one was armed all in warlike wize,
 Whom, to be *Paridell* he did deuize;
 And th'other all yclad in garments light,
 Discolour'd like to womanish disguise,
 He did resemble to his Ladie bright;
 And euer his faint hart much earned at the sight.

weened: thought mote: might auize: consider
 yclad: dressed earned: was grieved

And euer faine he towards them would goe,
 But yet durst not for dread approchen nie,
 But stood aloofe, vnweeting what to doe;
 Till that prickt forth with loues extremitie,
 That is the father of fowle gealosity,
 He closely nearer crept, the truth to weet:
 But, as he nigher drew, he easily
 Might scerne, that it was not his sweetest sweet,
 Ne yet her Belamour, the partner of his sheet.

faine: eagerly durst: dared nie: nigh, near
 unweeting: not knowing scerne: discern, see prickt: spurred

But it was scornfull *Braggadocchio*,
 That with his seruant *Trompart* houerd there,
 Sith late he fled from his too earnest foe:
 Whom such when as *Malbecco* spyed clere,
 He turned backe, and would haue fled arere;
 Till *Trompart* ronning hastily, him did stay,
 And bad before his soueraine Lord appere:
 That was him loth, yet durst he not gainesay,
 And comming him before, low louted on the lay.

Sith: since arere: back bad: ordered
 line 8: He was reluctant to do what Trompart said, yet he didn't
 argue. low louted on the lay: bowed low in the meadow

The Boaster at him sternely bent his browe,
 As if he could haue kild him with his looke,
 That to the ground him meekely made to bowe,
 And awfull terror deepe into him strooke,
 That euery member of his bodie quooke.
 Said he, thou man of nought, what doest thou here,
 Vnfitly furnisht with thy bag and booke,
 Where I expected one with shield and spere,
 To proue some deedes of armes vpon an equall pere.

nought: nothing

The wretched man at his imperious speach,
 Was all abasht, and low prostrating, said;
 Good Sir, let not my rudenesse be no breach
 Vnto your patience, ne be ill ypaid;
 For I vnwares this way by fortune straid,
 A silly Pilgrim driuen to distresse,
 That seeke a Lady,---There he suddein staid,
 And did the rest with grieuous sighes suppressse,
 While teares stood in his eies, few drops of bitternesse.

imperious: lordly abasht: embarrassed silly: innocent

What Ladie, man? (said *Trompart*) take good hart,
 And tell thy griefe, if any hidden lye;
 Was neuer better time to shew thy smart,
 Then now, that noble succour is thee by,
 That is the whole worlds commune remedy.
 That cheareful word his weake hart much did cheare,
 And with vaine hope his spirits faint supply,
 That bold he said; ô most redoubted Pere,
 Vouchsafe with mild regard a wretches cace to heare.

smart: pain succour: assistance
 redoubted Pere: noble father vouchsafe: condescend

Then sighing sore, It is not long (said he)
 Sith I enioyd the gentlest Dame alieu;
 Of whom a knight, no knight at all perdee,
 But shame of all, that doe for honor striue,
 By treacherous deceit did me depriue;
 Through open outrage he her bore away,
 And with fowle force vnto his will did driue,
 Which all good knights, that armes do beare this day,
 Are bound for to reuenge, and punish if they may.

sore: grievously perdee: truly

And you most noble Lord, that can and dare
 Redresse the wrong of miserable wight,
 Cannot employ your most victorious speare
 In better quarrell, then defence of right,
 And for a Ladie gainst a faithlesse knight;
 So shall your glory be aduanced much,
 And all faire Ladies magnifie your might,
 And eke my selfe, albe I simple such,
 Your worthy paine shall well reward with guerdon rich.

redresse: rectify wight: person eke: also
 albe: although guerdon: reward

With that out of his bouget forth he drew
 Great store of treasure, therewith him to tempt;
 But he on it lookt scornefully askew,
 As much disdeigning to be so misdempt,
 Or a war-monger to be basely nempt;
 And said; Thy offers base I greatly loth,
 And eke thy words vncourteous and vnkempt;
 I tread in dust thee and thy money both,
 That, were it not for shame,---So turned from him wroth.

bouget: wallet askew: at an angle misdempt: misjudged
 loth: loath, hate wroth: angrily

But *Trompart*, that his maisters humor knew,
 In lofty lookes to hide an humble mind,
 Was inly tickled with that golden vew,
 And in his eare him rounded close behind:
 Yet stoupt he not, but lay still in the wind,
 Waiting aduantage on the pray to sease;
 Till *Trompart* lowly to the ground inclind,
 Besought him his great courage to appease,
 And pardon simple man, that rash did him displease.

appease: cease from

Bigge looking like a doughtie Doucepere,
 At last he thus; Thou clod of vilest clay,
 I pardon yield, and with thy rudenesse beare;
 But weete henceforth, that all that golden pray,
 And all that else the vaine world vaunten may,
 I loath as dounge, ne deeme my dew reward:
 Fame is my meed, and glory vertues pray.
 But minds of mortall men are muchell mard,
 And mou'd amisse with massie mucks vnmeet regard.

weete: know deeme: think meed: reward

And more, I graunt to thy great miserie
 Gracious respect, thy wife shall backe be sent,
 And that vile knight, who euer that he bee,
 Which hath thy Lady reft, and knighthood shent,
 By *Sanglamort* my sword, whose deadly dent
 The bloud hath of so many thousands shed,
 I swear, ere long shall dearely it repent;
 Ne he twixt heauen and earth shall hide his hed,
 But soone he shall be found, and shortly doen be ded.

reft: stolen shent: disgraced ere: before

The foolish man thereat woxe wondrous blith,
 As if the word so spoken, were halfe donne,
 And humbly thanked him a thousand sith,
 That had from death to life him newly wonne.
 Tho forth the Boaster marching, braue begonne
 His stolen steed to thunder furiously,
 As if he heauen and hell would ouerronne,
 And all the world confound with cruelty,
 That much *Malbecco* ioyed in his iollity.

woxe wondrous blith: became very happy sith: times
 begonne: begane steed: horse iollity: gallant show

Thus long they three together traueiled,
 Through many a wood, and many an vncouth way,
 To seeke his wife, that was farre wandered:
 But those two sought nought, but the present pray,
 To weete the treasure, which he did bewray,
 On which their eies and harts were wholly set,
 With purpose, how they might it best betray;
 For sith the houre, that first he did them let
 The same behold, therewith their keene desires were whet.

weete: see bewray: reveal sith: since whet: sharpened

It fortun'd as they together far'd,
 They spide, where *Paridell* came pricking fast
 Vpon the plaine, the which himselfe prepar'd
 To giust with that braue straunger knight a cast,
 As on aduventure by the way he past:
 Alone he rode without his Paragone;
 For hauing filcht her bells, her vp he cast
 To the wide world, and let her fly alone,
 He nould be clogd. So had he serued many one.

fortun'd: happened filcht her bells: stolen her virginity
 far'd: proceeded pricking: riding Paragon: companion
 He nould be clogd: He wouldn't be tied down.

The gentle Lady, loose at randon left,
 The greene-wood long did walke, and wander wide
 At wilde aduventure, like a forlorne weft,
 Till on a day the *Satyres* her espide
 Straying alone withouten groome or guide;
 Her vp they tooke, and with them home her led,
 With them as housewife euer to abide,
 To milk their gotes, and make them cheese and bred,
 And euery one as commune good her handeled.

folorne weft: abandoned waif abide: remain
 line 9: They all had sex with her as if she were their common property.

That shortly she *Malbecco* has forgot,
 And eke Sir *Paridell*, all were he deare;
 Who from her went to seeke another lot,
 And now by fortune was arriued here,
 Where those two guilers with *Malbecco* were:
 Soone as the old man saw Sir *Paridell*,
 He fainted, and was almost dead with feare,
 Ne word he had to speake, his grieffe to tell,
 But to him louted low, and greeted goodly well.

eke: also guilers: tricksters louted: bowed

And after asked him for *Hellenore*,
 I take no keepe of her (said *Paridell*)
 She wonneth in the forrest there before.
 So forth he rode, as his aduventure fell;
 The whiles the Boaster from his loftie sell
 Faynd to alight, something amisse to mend;
 But the fresh Swayne would not his leasure dwell,
 But went his way; whom when he passed kend,
 He vp remounted light, and after faind to wend.

wonneth: lives fell: deadly sell: saddle Faynd: Pretended
 Swayne: young men whom when he passed kend: when he
 was sure *Paridell* was gone faind to wend: pretended to go

Perdy nay (said *Malbecco*) shall ye not:
 But let him passe as lightly, as he came:
 For litle good of him is to be got,
 And mickle perill to be put to shame.
 But let vs go to seeke my dearest Dame,
 Whom he hath left in yonder forrest wyld:
 For of her safety in great doubt I am,
 Least saluage beastes her person haue despoild:
 Then all the world is lost, and we in vaine haue toyld.

erdy: Truly mickle: much

They all agree, and forward them address:
 Ah but (said craftie *Trompart*) weete ye well,
 That yonder in that wastefull wilderness
 Huge monsters haunt, and many dangers dwell;
 Dragons, and Minotaures, and feendes of hell,
 And many wilde woodmen, which robbe and rend
 All trauellers; therefore aduise ye well,
 Before ye enterprise that way to wend:
 One may his iourney bring too soone to euill end.

weete: know rend: tear apart enterprise: try wend: go

Malbecco stopt in great astonishment,
 And with pale eyes fast fixed on the rest,
 Their counsell crau'd, in daunger imminent.
 Said *Trompart*, You that are the most opprest
 With burden of great treasure, I thinke best
 Here for to stay in safetie behind;
 My Lord and I will search the wide forrest.
 That counsell pleased not *Malbecco's* mind;
 For he was much affraid, himselfe alone to find.

Then is it best (said he) that ye doe leaue
 Your treasure here in some securitie,
 Either fast closed in some hollow greaue,
 Or buried in the ground from ieopardie,
 Till we returne againe in safetie:
 As for vs two, least doubt of vs ye haue,
 Hence farre away we will blindfolded lie,
 Ne priuie be vnto your treasures graue.
 It pleased: so he did, Then they march forward braue.

greave: grove least: lest, in case
 Ne priuie be: Nor knowledgeable be

Now when amid the thickest woods they were,
 They heard a noyse of many bagpipes shrill,
 And shrieking Hububs them approaching nere,
 Which all the forrest did with horror fill:
 That dreadfull sound the boasters hart did thrill,
 With such amazement, that in haste he fled,
 Ne euer looked backe for good or ill,
 And after him eke fearefull *Trompart* sped;
 The old man could not fly, but fell to ground halfe ded.

thrill: pierce eke: also

Yet afterwards close creeping, as he might,
 He in a bush did hide his fearefull hed,
 The iolly *Satyres* full of fresh delight,
 Came dauncing forth, and with them nimbly led
 Faire *Hellenore*, with girlonds all bespred,
 Whom their May-lady they had newly made:
 She proud of that new honour, which they red,
 And of their louely fellowship full glade,
 Daunst liuely, and her face did with a Lawrell shade.

girlonds: victory wreaths red: declared

The silly man that in the thicket lay
 Saw all this goodly sport, and griued sore,
 Yet durst he not against it doe or say,
 But did his hart with bitter thoughts engore,
 To see th'vnkindnesse of his *Hellenore*.
 All day they daunced with great lustihed,
 And with their horned feet the greene grasse wore,
 The whiles their Gotes vpon the brouzes fed,
 Till drouping *Phoebus* gan to hide his golden hed.

silly: simple sore: much durst: dared brogues: twigs

Tho vp they gan their merry pypes to trusse,
 And all their goodly heards did gather round,
 But euery *Satyre* first did giue a busse
 To *Hellenore*: so busses did abound.
 Now gan the humid vapour shed the ground
 With perly deaw, and th'Earthes gloomy shade
 Did dim the brightnesse of the welkin round,
 That euery bird and beast awarned made,
 To shrowd themselues, whiles sleepe their senses did inuade.

Tho: then trusse: pack up a busse: a kiss welkin: sky

Which when *Malbecco* saw, out of his bush
 Vpon his hands and feete he crept full light,
 And like a Gote emongst the Gotes did rush,
 That through the helpe of his faire hornes on hight,
 And misty dampe of misconceiuing night,
 And eke through likenesse of his gotish beard,
 He did the better counterfeite aright:
 So home he marcht emongst the horned heard,
 That none of all the *Satyres* him espyde or heard.

his faire hornes: ironic , a cuckold's horns eke: also

At night, when all they went to sleepe, he vewd,
 Whereas his louely wife emongst them lay,
 Embraced of a *Satyre* rough and rude,
 Who all the night did minde his ioyous play:
 Nine times he heard him come aloft ere day,
 That all his hart with gealosie did swell;
 But yet that nights ensample did bewray,
 That not for nought his wife them loued so well,
 When one so oft a night did ring his matins bell.

ere: before bewray: reveal did ring his matins bell:
 ironic image for having an orgasm (Matins are morning prayers.)

So closely as he could, he to them crept,
 When wearie of their sport to sleepe they fell,
 And to his wife, that now full soundly slept,
 He whispered in her eare, and did her tell,
 That it was he, which by her side did dwell,
 And therefore prayd her wake, to heare him plaine.
 As one out of a dreame not waked well,
 She turned her, and returned backe againe:
 Yet her for to awake he did the more constraine.

constraine: force

At last with irkesome trouble she abrayd;
 And then perceiuing, that it was indeed
 Her old *Malbecco*, which did her vpbrayd,
 With loosennesse of her loue, and loathly deed,
 She was astonisht with exceeding dreed,
 And would haue wakt the *Satyre* by her syde;
 But he her prayd, for mercy, or for meed,
 To saue his life, ne let him be descryde,
 But hearken to his lore, and all his counsell hyde.

abrayd: awoke upbrayd: chastise, rebuke meed: reward
 descryde: seen hearken: listen

Tho gan he her perswade, to leaue that lewd
 And loathsome life, of God and man abhord,
 And home returne, where all should be renewd
 With perfect peace, and bandes of fresh accord,
 And she receiu'd againe to bed and bord,
 As if no trespasse euer had bene donne:
 But she it all refused at one word,
 And by no meanes would to his will be wonne,
 But chose emongst the iolly *Satyres* still to wonne.

Tho gan: Then began bord: table wonne: live

He wooed her, till day spring he espyde;
 But all in vaine: and then turnd to the heard,
 Who butted him with hornes on euery syde,
 And trode downe in the durt, where his hore beard
 Was fowly dight, and he of death afeard.
 Early before the heauens fairest light
 Out of the ruddy East was fully reard,
 The heardees out of their foldes were loosed quight,
 And he emongst the rest crept forth in sory plight.

hore: white dight: marked plight: condition

So soone as he the Prison dore did pas,
 He ran as fast, as both his feete could beare,
 And neuer looked, who behind him was,
 Ne scarsely who before: like as a Beare
 That creeping close, amongst the hiues to reare
 An hony combe, the wakefull dogs espy,
 And him assayling, sore his carkasse teare,
 That hardly he with life away does fly,
 Ne staves, till safe himselfe he see from ieopardy.

reare: steal staves: stops

Ne staid he, till he came vnto the place,
 Where late his treasure he entombed had,
 Where when he found it not (for *Trompart* bace
 Had it purloyned for his maister bad:)
 With extreme fury he became quite mad,
 And ran away, ran with himselfe away:
 That who so straungely had him seene bestad,
 With vpstart haire, and staring eyes dismay,
 From Limbo lake him late escaped sure would say.

proloyned: stolen bested: situated
 Limbo lake: the underworld

High ouer hilles and ouer dales he fled,
 As if the wind him on his winges had borne,
 Ne banck nor bush could stay him, when he sped
 His nimble feet, as treading still on thorne:
 Griefe, and despight, and gealosie, and scorne
 Did all the way him follow hard behind,
 And he himselfe himselfe loath'd so forlorne,
 So shamefully forlorne of womankind;
 That as a Snake, still lurked in his wounded mind.

dales: valleys despight: malice forlorne: abandoned

Still fled he forward, looking backward still,
 Ne stayd his flight, nor fearefull agony,
 Till that he came vnto a rockie hill,
 Ouer the sea, suspended dreadfully,
 That liuing creature it would terrify,
 To looke adowne, or vpward to the hight:
 From thence he threw himselfe dispiteously,
 All desperate of his fore-damned spright,
 That seem'd no helpe for him was left in liuing sight.

fore-damned spreight: utterly damned spirit

But through long anguish, and selfe-murdring thought
 He was so wasted and forpined quight,
 That all his substance was consum'd to nought,
 And nothing left, but like an aery Spright,
 That on the rockes he fell so flit and light,
 That he thereby receiu'd no hurt at all,
 But chaunced on a craggy cliff to light;
 Whence he with crooked clawes so long did crall,
 That at the last he found a caue with entrance small.

forpined: pined away nought: nothing flit: fast

Into the same he creepes, and thenceforth there
 Resolu'd to build his balefull mansion,
 In dreary darkenesse, and continuall feare
 Of that rockes fall, which euer and anon
 Threates with huge ruine him to fall vpon,
 That he dare neuer sleepe, but that one eye
 Still ope he keeps for that occasion;
 Ne euer rests he in tranquillity,
 The roring billowes beat his bowre so boysterously.

baleful: evil

Ne euer is he wont on ought to feed,
 But toades and frogs, his pasture poysonous,
 Which in his cold complexion do breed
 A filthy bloud, or humour rancorous,
 Matter of doubt and dread suspitious,
 That doth with curelesse care consume the hart,
 Corrupts the stomacke with gall vitious,
 Croscuts the liuer with internall smart,
 And doth transfixe the soule with deathes eternall dart.

wont: accustomed

Yet can he neuer dye, but dying liues,
 And doth himselfe with sorrow new sustaine,
 That death and life attonce vnto him giues.
 And painefull pleasure turnes to pleasing paine.
 There dwels he euer, miserable swaine,
 Hatefull both to him selfe, and euery wight;
 Where he through priuy griefe, and horrour vaine,
 Is woxen so deform'd, that he has quight
 Forgot he was a man, and *Gealosie* is hight.

swaine/wight: person privy: secret, private
 woxen: became hight: named

Cant. XI.

*Britomart chaceth Ollyphant,
 findes Scudamour distrest:
 Assayes the house of Busyrane,
 where Loues spoyles are exprest.*

O Hatefull hellish Snake, what furie furst
 Brought thee from balefull house of *Proserpine*,
 Where in her bosome she thee long had nurst,
 And fostred vp with bitter milke of tine,
 Fowle Gealosie, that turnest loue diuine
 To ioylesse dread, and mak'st the louing hart
 With hatefull thoughts to languish and to pine,
 And feed it selfe with selfe-consuming smart?
 Of all the passions in the mind thou vilest art.

baleful: deadly tine: affliction

O let him far be banished away,
 And in his stead let Loue for euer dwell,
 Sweet Loue, that doth his golding wings embay
 In blessed Nectar, and pure Pleasures well,
 Vntroubled of vile feare, or bitter fell.
 And ye faire Ladies, that your kingdomes make
 In th'harts of men, them gouerne wisely well,
 And of faire *Britomart* ensample take,
 That was as trew in loue, as Turtle to her make.

embay: bathe fell: gall make: mate

Who with Sir *Satyrane*, as earst ye red,
 Forth ryding from *Malbecco's* hostlesse hous,
 Far off aspyde a young man, the which fled
 From an huge Geaunt, that with hideous
 And hatefull outrage long him chaced thus;
 It was that *Ollyphant*, the brother deare
 Of that *Argante* vile and vitious,
 From whom the *Squire of Dames* was reft whylere;
 This all as bad as she, and worse, if worse ought were.

earst ye red: earlier you saw reft whylere: cut off earlier
 ought: anything

For as the sister did in feminine
 And filthy lust exceede all woman kind,
 So he surpassed his sex masculine,
 In beastly vse that I did euer find;
 Whom when as *Britomart* beheld behind
 The fearefull boy so greedily pursew,
 She was emmoued in her noble mind,
 T'employ her puissance to his reskew,
 And pricked fiercely forward, where she him did vew.

puissanunce: power pricked: rode

Ne was Sir *Satyrane* her far behinde,
 But with like fiercenesse did ensew the chace:
 Whom when the Gyaunt saw, he soone resinde
 His former suit, and from them fled apace;
 They after both, and boldly bad him bace,
 And each did striue the other to out-goe,
 But he them both outran a wondrous space,
 For he was long, and swift as any Roe,
 And now made better speed, t'escape his feared foe.

ensew: pursue apace: fast
 bad him bace: challenged him Roe: type of deer

It was not *Satyrane*, whom he did feare,
 But *Britomart* the flowre of chastity;
 For he the powre of chast hands might not beare,
 But alwayes did their dread encounter fly:
 And now so fast his feet he did apply,
 That he has gotten to a forrest neare,
 Where he is shrowded in security.
 The wood they enter, and search euey where,
 They searched diuersely, so both diuided were.

Faire *Britomart* so long him followed,
 That she at last came to a fountaine sheare,
 By which there lay a knight all wallowed
 Vpon the grassy ground, and by him neare
 His haberieon, his helmet, and his speare;
 A little off, his shield was rudely throwne,
 On which the winged boy in colours cleare
 Depeincted was, full easie to be knowne,
 And he thereby, where euer it in field was showne.

sheare: bright, clear haberion: armor

His face vpon the ground did groueling ly,
 As if he had bene slombring in the shade,
 That the braue Mayd would not for courtesy,
 Out of his quiet slomber him abrae,
 Nor seeme too suddeinly him to inuade:
 Still as she stood, she heard with grieuous throb
 Him grone, as if his hart were peeces made,
 And with most painefull pangs to sigh and sob,
 That pitty did the Virgins hart of patience rob.

abrode: awake

At last forth breaking into bitter plaintes
 He said; ô soueraigne Lord that sit'st on hye,
 And raignst in blis emongst thy blessed Saintes,
 How suffrest thou such shamefull cruelty,
 So long vnwreaked of thine enimy?
 Or hast thou, Lord, of good mens cause no heed?
 Or doth thy iustice sleepe, and silent ly?
 What booteth then the good and righteous deed,
 If goodnesse find no grace, nor righteousnesse no meed?

soveraigne: supreme unwreaked: unrevenge
 heed: attention booteth: avails

If good find grace, and righteousnesse reward,
 Why then is *Amoret* in caytiue band,
 Sith that more bounteous creature neuer far'd
 On foot, vpon the face of liuing land?
 Or if that heauenly iustice may withstand
 The wrongfull outrage of vnrighteous men,
 Why then is *Busirane* with wicked hand
 Suffred, these seuen monethes day in secret den
 My Lady and my loue so cruelly to pen?

caytiue: captive sith: since to pen: to imprison

My Lady and my loue is cruelly pend
 In dolefull darkenesse from the vew of day,
 Whilest deadly torments do her chast brest rend,
 And the sharpe steele doth riue her hart in tway,
 All for she *Scudamore* will not deny.
 Yet thou vile man, vile *Scudamore* art sound,
 Ne canst her ayde, ne canst her foe dismay:
 Vnworthy wretch to tread vpon the ground,
 For whom so faire a Lady feeles so sore a wound.

doleful: sorrowful rend: tear apart rive: cut
 tway: two sound: hale and healthy

There an huge heape of singulfes did oppresse
 His strugling soule, and swelling throbs empeach
 His foltring toung with pangs of drerinesse,
 Choking the remnant of his plaintife speach,
 As if his dayes were come to their last reach.
 Which when she heard, and saw the ghaftly fit,
 Threatning into his life to make a breach,
 Both with great ruth and terrour she was smit,
 Fearing least from her cage the wearie soule would flit.

singulfes: sighs empeach: hinder breach: hole
 ruth: pity smit: hit least: for fear that

Tho stooping downe she him amoued light;
 Who therewith somewhat starting, vp gan looke,
 And seeing him behind a straunger knight,
 Whereas no liuing creature he mistooke,
 With great indignaunce he that sight forsooke,
 And downe againe himselfe disdainefully
 Abiecting, th'earth with his faire forehead strooke:
 Which the bold Virgin seeing, gan apply
 Fit medicine to his griefe, and spake thus courtesly.

Tho: then mistooke: suspected farsooke: avoided
 objecting: throwing spake: spoke

Ah gentle knight, whose deepe conceiued griefe
 Well seemes t'exceede the powre of patience,
 Yet if that heauenly grace some good reliefe
 You send, submit you to high prouidence,
 And euer in your noble hart prepense,
 That all the sorrow in the world is lesse,
 Then vertues might, and values confidence,
 For who nill bide the burden of distresse,
 Must not here thinke to liue: for life is wretchednesse.

prepense: consider nill hide: will not hide, endure

Therefore, faire Sir, do comfort to you take,
 And freely read, what wicked felon so
 Hath outrag'd you, and thrald your gentle make.
 Perhaps this hand may helpe to ease your woe,
 And wreake your sorrow on your cruell foe,
 At least it faire endeouour will apply.
 Those feeling wordes so neare the quicke did goe,
 That vp his head he reared easily,
 And leaning on his elbow, these few wordes let fly.

read: tell felon: thief thrald: imprisoned make: mate
 wreake: take vengeance endeouour: attempt quicke: his life

What boots it plaine, that cannot be redrest,
 And sow vaine sorrow in a fruitlesse eare,
 Sith powre of hand, nor skill of learned brest,
 Ne worldly price cannot redeeme my deare,
 Out of her thraldome and continuall feare?
 For he the tyraunt, which her hath in ward
 By strong enchauntments and blacke Magicke leare,
 Hath in a dungeon deepe her close embard,
 And many dreadfull feends hath pointed to her gard.

what boots it plaine: what good does it do to complain
 redrest: corrected redeeme: get back leare: lore, lessons
 embard: imprisoned

There he tormenteth her most terribly,
 And day and night afflicts with mortall paine,
 Because to yield him loue she doth deny,
 Once to me yold, not to be yold againe:
 But yet by torture he would her constraine
 Loue to conceiue in her disdainfull brest;
 Till so she do, she must in doole remaine,
 Ne may by liuing meanes be thence relest:
 What boots it then to plaine, that cannot be redrest?

yold: yielded, given constraine: force doole: sorrow

With this sad hersall of his heauy stresse,
 The warlike Damzell was empassiond sore,
 And said; Sir knight, your cause is nothing lesse,
 Then is your sorrow, certes if not more;
 For nothing so much pittie doth implore,
 As gentle Ladies helplesse misery.
 But yet, if please ye listen to my lore,
 I will with prooue of last extremity,
 Deliuer her fro thence, or with her for you dy.

hersall: recounting, rehearsal then: than certes: certainly
 my lore: my lesson
 line 9: I'll deliver her from thence or die with her for you

Ah gentlest knight aliue, (said *Scudamore*)
 What huge heroicke magnanimity
 Dwels in thy bounteous brest? what couldst thou more,
 If she were thine, and thou as now am I?
 O spare thy happy dayes, and them apply
 To better boot, but let me dye, that ought;
 More is more losse: one is enough to dy.
 Life is not lost, (said she) for which is bought
 Endlesse renowm, that more then death is to be sought.

boot: reward

Thus she at length perswaded him to rise,
 And with her wend, to see what new successe
 Mote him befall vpon new enterprise;
 His armes, which he had vowed to disprofesse,
 She gathered vp and did about him dresse,
 And his forwanded steed vnto him got:
 So forth they both yfere make their progresse,
 And march not past the mountenance of a shot.
 Till they arriu'd, whereas their purpose they did plot.

wend: go mote him befall: might happen to him
 disprofesse: abandon forwanded: stayed away
 yfere: together mountenance: distance

There they dismounting, drew their weapons bold
 And stoutly came vnto the Castle gate;
 Whereas no gate they found, them to withhold,
 Nor ward to wait at morne and euening late,
 But in the Porch, that did them sore amate,
 A flaming fire, ymixt with smouldry smoke,
 And stinking Sulphure, that with griesly hate
 And dreadfull horroure did all entraunce choke,
 Enforced them their forward footing to reuoke.

sore amate: greatly terrify

Greatly thereat was *Britomart* dismayd,
 Ne in that stownd wist, how her selfe to beare;
 For daunger vaine it were, to haue assayd
 That cruell element, which all things feare,
 Ne none can suffer to approchen neare:
 And turning backe to *Scudamour*, thus sayd;
 What monstrous enmity prouoke we heare,
 Foolhardy as th'Earthes children, the which made
 Battell against the Gods? so we a God inuade.

stownd: trouble wist: know enmity: hatred

Daunger without discretion to attempt,
 Inglorious and beastlike is: therefore Sir knight,
 Aread what course of you is safest dempt,
 And how we with our foe may come to fight.
 This is (quoth he) the dolorous despight,
 Which earst to you I playnd: for neither may
 This fire be quencht by any wit or might,
 Ne yet by any meanes remou'd away,
 So mighty be th'enchauntments, which the same do stay.

aread: listen to dempt: deemed, thought quoth: said
 dolorous despite: the sorrowful malice earst: earlier
 playnd: complained

What is there else, but cease these fruitlesse paines,
 And leaue me to my former languishing;
 Faire *Amoret* must dwell in wicked chaines,
 And *Scudamore* here dye with sorrowing.
 Perdy not so; (said she) for shamefull thing
 It were t'abandon noble cheuisaunce,
 For shew of perill, without venturing:
 Rather let try extremities of chaunce,
 Then enterprised prayse for dread to disauaunce.

Perdy: Truly cheuisaunce: chivalry
 line 8-9: rather take a long shot (an extreme chance) than not for
 fear of lowering your reputation

Therewith resolu'd to proue her vtmost might,
 Her ample shield she threw before her face,
 And her swords point directing forward right,
 Assayld the flame, the which eftsoones gaue place,
 And did it selfe diuide with equall space,
 That through she passed; as a thunder bolt
 Perceth the yielding ayre, and doth displace
 The soring clouds into sad showres ymolt;
 So to her yold the flames, and did their force reuolt,

assayld: attacked eftsoones: forthwith yold: yielded

Whom whenas *Scudamour* saw past the fire,
 Safe and vntoucht, he likewise gan assay,
 With greedy will, and enuious desire,
 And bad the stubborne flames to yield him way:
 But cruell *Mulciber* would not obey
 His threatfull pride, but did the more augment
 His mighty rage, and with imperious sway
 Him forst (maulgre) his fiercenesse to relent,
 And backe retire, all scorcht and pitifully brent.

assay: try bad: ordered Mulciber: God of fire
 maulgre: unwillingly

With huge impatience he inly swelt,
 More for great sorrow, that he could not pas,
 Then for the burning torment, which he felt,
 That with fell woodnesse he effierced was,
 And wilfully him throwing on the gras,
 Did beat and bounse his head and brest full sore;
 The whiles the Championesse now entred has
 The vtmost rowme, and past the formest dore,
 The vtmost rowme, abounding with all precious store.

inly swelt: inwardly fainted
 line 4: that he was inflamed with deadly madness

For round about, the wals yclothed were
 With goodly arras of great maiesty,
 Wouen with gold and silke so close and nere,
 That the rich metall lurked priuily,
 As faining to be hid from enuious eye;
 Yet here, and there, and euery where vnwares
 It shewd it selfe, and shone vnwillingly;
 Like a discolourd Snake, whose hidden snares
 Through the greene gras his long bright burnisht backe
 declares.

arras: wall hanging priuily: secretly faining: desiring
 Stanzas 29-46 describe the tapestries in Busyrane's castle.

And in those Tapets weren fashioned
 Many faire pourtraicts, and many a faire feate,
 And all of loue, and all of lusty-hed,
 As seemed by their semblaunt did entreat;
 And eke all *Cupids* warres they did repeate,
 And cruell battels, which he whilome fought
 Gainst all the Gods, to make his empire great;
 Besides the huge massacres, which he wrought
 On mighty kings and kesars, into thraldome brought.

Tapets: Tapestries eke: also whilome: formerly

Therein was writ, how often thundring *Ioue*
 Had felt the point of his hart-percing dart,
 And leauing heauens kingdome, here did roue
 In straunge disguize, to slake his scalding smart;
 Now like a Ram, faire *Helle* to peruart,
 Now like a Bull, *Europa* to withdraw:
 Ah, how the fearefull Ladies tender hart
 Did liuely seeme to tremble, weh she saw
 The huge seas vnder her t'obay her seruauents law.

smart: pain

Soone after that into a golden showre
 Him selfe he chaung'd faire *Danaë* to vew,
 And through the rooffe of her strong brasen towre
 Did raine into her lap an hony dew,
 The whiles her foolish garde, that little knew
 Of such deceit, kept th'yr on dore fast bard,
 And watcht, that none should enter nor issew;
 Vaine was the watch, and bootlesse all the ward,
 Whenas the God to golden hew him selfe transfard.

brasen: brass issew: leave bootlesse: futile ward: guard

Then was he turnd into a snowy Swan,
 To win faire *Leda* to his louely trade:
 O wondrous skill, and sweet wit of the man,
 That her in daffadillies sleeping made,
 From scorching heat her daintie limbes to shade:
 Whiles the proud Bird ruffing his fethers wyde,
 And brushing his faire brest, did her inuade;
 She slept, yet twixt her eyelids closely spyde,
 How towards her he rusht, and smiled at his pryde.

Then shewd it, how the *Thebane Semelee*
 Deceiu'd of gealous *Iuno*, did require
 To see him in his soueraigne maiestee,
 Armd with his thunderbolts and lightning fire,
 Whence dearely she with death bought her desire.
 But faire *Alcmene* better match did make,
 Ioying his loue in likenesse more entiere;
 Three nights in one, they say, that for her sake
 He then did put, her pleasures lenger to partake.

entiere: internal

Twise was he seene in soaring Eagles shape,
 And with wide wings to beat the buxome ayre,
 Once, when he with *Asterie* did scape,
 Againe, when as the *Troiane* boy so faire
 He snatcht from *Ida* hill, and with him bare:
 Wondrous delight it was, there to behold,
 How the rude Shepheards after him did stare,
 Trembling through feare, least down he fallen should,
 And often to him calling, to take surer hould.

bare: bore, carried

In *Satyres* shape *Antiopa* he snatcht:
 And like a fire, when he *Aegin*' assayd:
 A shepheard, when *Mnemosyne* he catcht:
 And like a Serpent to the *Thracian* mayd.
 Whiles thus on earth great *Ioue* these pageaunts playd,
 The winged boy did thrust into his throne,
 And scoffing, thus vnto his mother sayd,
 Lo now the heauens obey to me alone,
 And take me for their *Ioue*, whiles *Ioue* to earth is gone.

And thou, faire *Phoebus*, in thy colours bright
 Wast there enwouen, and the sad distresse,
 In which that boy thee plunged, for despight,
 That thou bewray'dst his mothers wantonnesse,
 When she with *Mars* was meynt in ioyfulnesse:
 For thy, he thrild thee with a leaden dart,
 To loue faire *Daphne*, which thee loued lesse:
 Lesse she thee lou'd, then was thy iust desart,
 Yet was thy loue her death, & her death was thy smart.

despight; malice bewray'dst: revealed meynt: joined
 For thy: therefore thrild: pierced smart: pain

So louedst thou the lusty *Hyacinct*,
 So louedst thou the faire *Coronis* deare:
 Yet both are of thy haplesse hand extinct,
 Yet both in flowres do liue, and loue thee beare,
 The one a Pounce, the other a sweet breare:
 For grieffe whereof, ye mote haue liuely seene
 The God himselfe rending his golden heare,
 And breaking quite his gyrlond euer greene,
 With other signes of sorrow and impatient teene.

haplesse: unlucky Pounce: pansy sweet breare: sweet briar
 rending:tearing teene: sorrow

Both for those two, and for his owne deare sonne,
 The sonne of *Climene* he did repent,
 Who bold to guide the charet of the Sunne,
 Himselfe in thousand peeces fondly rent,
 And all the world with flashing fier brent;
 So like, that all the walles did seeme to flame.
 Yet cruell *Cupid*, not herewith content,
 Forst him eftsoones to follow other game,
 And loue a Shepheards daughter for his dearest Dame.

charet: chariot rent: destroyed brent: burned
 eftsoones: soon after

He loued *Isse* for his dear est Dame,
 And for her sake her cattell fed a while,
 And for her sake a cowheard vile became,
 The seruant of *Admetus* cowheard vile,
 Whiles that from heauen he suffered exile.
 Long were to tell each other louely fit,
 Now like a Lyon, hunting after spoile,
 Now like a Stag, now like a faulcon flit:
 All which in that faire arras was most liuely writ.

flit: fast

Next vnto him was *Neptune* pictured,
 In his diuine resemblance wondrous lyke:
 His face was rugged, and his hoarie hed
 Dropped with brackish deaw; his three-forkt Pyke
 He stearnly shooke, and therewith fierce did stryke
 The raging billowes, that on euery syde
 They trembling stood, and made a long broad dyke,
 That his swift charet might haue passage wyde,
 Which foure great *Hippodames* did draw in temewise tyde.

hoarie: white dyke: bridge Hippodames: sea-horses
 in temewise tyde: as a team

His sea-horses did seeme to sport amayne,
 And from their nosethrilles blow the brynie streame,
 That made the sparckling waues to smoke agayne,
 And flame with gold, but the white fomy creame,
 Did shine with siluer, and shoot forth his beame.
 The God himselfe did pensieue seeme and sad,
 And hong adowne his head, as he did dreame:
 For priuy loue his brest empierced had,
 Ne ought but deare *Bisaltis* ay could make him glad.

amayne: violently pensieue: thoughtful priuy: secret
 empierced: pierced

He loued eke *Iphimedia* deare,
 And *Aeolus* faire daughter *Arne* hight.
 For whom he turnd him selfe into a Steare,
 And fed on fodder, to beguile her sight.
 Also to win *Deucalions* daughter bright,
 He turnd him selfe into a Dolphin fayre;
 And like a winged horse he tooke his flight,
 To snaky-locke *Medusa* to repayre,
 On whom he got faire *Pegasus*, that flitteth in the ayre.

got: begot flitteth: flies

Next *Saturne* was, (but who would euer weene,
 That sullein *Saturne* euer weend to loue?
 Yet loue is sullein, and *Saturnlike* seene,
 As he did for *Erigone* it proue,
 That to a *Centaure* did him selfe transmoue.
 So prou'd it eke that gracious God of wine,
 When for to compasse *Philliras* hard loue,
 He turnd himselfe into a fruitfull vine,
 And into her faire bosome made his grapes decline.

weene: suppose transmoue: transform eke: also

Long were to tell the amorous assayes,
 And gentle pangues, with which he maked meeke
 The mighty *Mars*, to learne his wanton playes:
 How oft for *Venus*, and how often eek
 For many other Nymphes he sore did shreek,
 With womanish teares, and with vnwarlike smarts,
 Priuily moystening his horrid cheek.
 There was he painted full of burning darts,
 And many wide woundes launched through his inner parts.

priuily: secretly

Ne did he spare (so cruell was the Elfe)
 His owne deare mother, (ah why should he so?)
 Ne did he spare sometime to pricke himselfe,
 That he might taste the sweet consuming woe,
 Which he had wrought to many others moe.
 But to declare the mournfull Tragedyes,
 And spoiles, wherewith he all the ground did strow,
 More eath to number, with how many eyes
 High heauen beholds sad louers nightly theeueries.

eath: easy theeueries: thieveries

Kings Queenes, Lords Ladies, Knights & Damzels gent
 Were heap'd together with the vulgar sort,
 And mingled with the raskall rablement,
 Without respect of person or of port,
 To shew Dan *Cupids* powre and great effort:
 And round about a border was entrayld,
 Of broken bowes and arrowes shiuered short,
 And a long bloody riuer through them rayld,
 So liuely and so like, that liuing sence it fayld.

the vulgar sort: regular people rablement: crowd port: demeanor, bearing
 entrayld: intertwined rayld: flowed

And at the vpper end of that faire rowme,
 There was an Altar built of pretious stone,
 Of passing vawew, and of great renowme,
 On which there stood an Image all alone,
 Of massy gold, which with his owne light shone;
 And wings it had with sundry colours dight,
 More sundry colours, then the proud *Pauone*
 Beares in his boasted fan, or *Iris* bright,
 When her discoloured bow she sprede through heauens hight.

sundry: various dight: marked *Pauone*: peacock
Iris: goddess of the rainbow

Blindfold he was, and in his cruell fist
 A mortall bow and arrowes keene did hold,
 With which he shot at randon, when him list,
 Some headed with sad lead, some with pure gold;
 (Ah man beware, how thou those darts behold)
 A wounded Dragon vnder him did ly,
 Whose hideous tayle his left foot did enfold,
 And with a shaft was shot through either eye,
 That no man forth might draw, ne no man remedye.

list: wanted

And vnderneath his feet was written thus,
Vnto the Victor of the Gods this bee:
 And all the people in that ample hous
 Did to that image bow their humble knee,
 And oft committed fowle Idolatree.
 That wondrous sight faire *Britomart* amazed,
 Ne seeing could her wonder satisfie,
 But euermore and more vpon it gazed,
 The whiles the passing brightnes her fraile sences dazed.

Tho as she backward cast her busie eye,
 To search each secret of that goodly sted,
 Ouer the dore thus written she did spye
Be bold: she oft and oft it ouer-red,
 Yet could not find what sence it figured:
 But what so were therein or writ or ment,
 She was no whit thereby discouraged
 From prosecuting of her first intent,
 But forward with bold steps into the next roome went.

tho: then sted: place

Much fairer, then the former, was that roome,
 And richlier by many partes arayd:
 For not with arras made in painefull loome,
 But with pure gold it all was ouerlayd,
 Wrought with wilde Antickes, which their follies playd,
 In the rich metall, as they liuing were:
 A thousand monstrous formes therein were made,
 Such as false loue doth oft vpon him weare:
 For loue in thousand monstrous formes doth oft appeare.

arayd: ornamented Antickes: ancient or fantastic figures oft: often

And all about, the glistring walles were hong
 With warlike spoiles, and with victorious prayes,
 Of mighty Conquerours and Captaines strong,
 Which were whilome captiued in their dayes
 To cruell loue, and wrought their owne decayes:
 Their swerds & speres were broke, & hauberques rent;
 And their proud girlonds of tryumphant bayes
 Troden in dust with fury insolent,
 To shew the victors might and mercillesse intent.

prayes: preys, victims whilome: formerly
 hauberques rent: armor destroyed bayes: laurels

The warlike Mayde beholding earnestly
 The goodly ordinance of this rich place,
 Did greatly wonder, ne could satisfie
 Her greedy eyes with gazing a long space:
 But more she meruaild that no footings trace,
 Nor wight appear'd, but wastefull emptinesse,
 And solemne silence ouer all that place:
 Straunge thing it seem'd, that none was to possesse
 So rich purueyance, ne them keepe with carefulnesse.

ordinance: arrangement trace: walk wight: person
 purueyance: provision

And as she lookt about, she did behold,
 How ouer that same dore was likewise writ,
Be bold, be bold, and euery where *Be bold*,
 That much she muz'd, yet could not construe it
 By any ridling skill, or commune wit.
 At last she spyde at that roomes vpper end,
 Another yron dore, on which was writ,
Be not too bold; whereto though she did bend
 Her earnest mind, yet wist not what it might intend.

muz'd: thought construe: understand wist: knew

Thus she there waited vntill euentide,
 Yet liuing creature none she saw appeare:
 And now sad shadowes gan the world to hyde,
 From mortall vew, and wrap in darknesse dreare;
 Yet nould she d'off her weary armes, for feare
 Of secret daunger, ne let sleepe oppresse
 Her heauy eyes with natures burdein deare,
 But drew her selfe aside in sicknesse,
 And her welpointed weapons did about her dresse.

nould she d'off: she wouldn't take off sicknesse: safety

Cant. XII.

*The maske of Cupid, and th'enchanted
 Chamber are displayd,
 Whence Britomart redeemes faire
 Amoret, through charmes decayd.*

Tho when as chearelesse Night ycouered had
 Faire heauen with an vniuersall cloud,
 That euery wight dismayd with darknesse sad,
 In silence and in sleepe themselues did shroud,
 She heard a shrilling Trompet sound aloud,
 Signe of nigh battell, or got victory;
 Nought therewith daunted was her courage proud,
 But rather stird to cruell enmity,
 Expecting euer, when some foe she might descry.

Tho: Then wight: person nigh: near nought; not at all
 enmity: hostility descry: perceiue

With that, an hideous storme of winde arose,
 With dreadfull thunder and lightning atwixt,
 And an earth-quake, as if it streight would lose
 The worlds foundations from his centre fixt;
 A direfull stench of smoke and sulphure mixt
 Ensewd, whose noyance fild the fearefull sted,
 From the fourth houre of night vntill the sixt;
 Yet the bold *Britonesse* was nought ydred,
 Though much emmou'd, but stedfast still perseuered.

ensewd: followed sted: place

All suddenly a stormy whirlwind blew
 Throughout the house, that clapped euery dore,
 With which that yron wicket open flew,
 As it with mightie leuers had bene tore:
 And forth issewd, as on the ready flore
 Of some Theatre, a graue personage,
 That in his hand a branch of laurell bore,
 With comely haueour and count'nance sage,
 Yclad in costly garments, fit for tragicke Stage.

clapped: slammed wicket: gate
 count'nance sage: wise face yclad: dressed

Proceeding to the midst, he still did stand,
 As if in mind he somewhat had to say,
 And to the vulgar beckning with his hand,
 In signe of silence, as to heare a play,
 By liuely actions he gan bewray
 Some argument of matter passioned;
 Which doen, he backe retyred soft away,
 And passing by, his name discovered,
Ease, on his robe in golden letters cyphered.

vulgar: common people gan bewray: began to reveal
 cyphered: written

The noble Mayd, still standing all this vewd,
 And merueild at his strange intendiment;
 With that a ioyous fellowship issewd
 Of Minstrals, making goodly meriment,
 With wanton Bardes, and Rymers impudent,
 All which together sung full chearefully
 A lay of lous delight, with sweet consent:
 After whom marcht a iolly company,
 In manner of a maske, enranged orderly.

intendiment: knowledge, intention minstrals: musicians
 Bardes: poets lay: song jolly: lively

The whiles a most delitious harmony,
 In full straunge notes was sweetly heard to sound,
 That the rare sweetnesse of the melody
 The feeble senses wholly did confound,
 And the fraile soule in deepe delight nigh dround:
 And when it ceast, shrill trompets loud did bray,
 That their report did farre away rebound,
 And when they ceast, it gan againe to play,
 The whiles the maskers marched forth in trim aray.

confound: confuse nigh: nearly rebound: echo
 aray: order

The first was *Fancy*, like a louely boy,
 Of rare aspect, and beautie without peare;
 Matchable either to that ympe of *Troy*,
 Whom *Ioue* did loue, and chose his cup to beare,
 Or that same daintie lad, which was so deare
 To great *Alcides*, that when as he dyde,
 He wailed womanlike with many a teare,
 And euery wood, and euery valley wyde
 He fild with *Hylas* name; the Nymphes eke *Hylas* cryde.

without peare: unparalleled eke: also

His garment neither was of silke nor say,
 But painted plumes, in goodly order dight,
 Like as the sunburnt *Indians* do aray
 Their tawney bodies, in their proudest plight:
 As those same plumes, so seemd he vaine and light,
 That by his gate might easily appeare;
 For still he far'd as dauncing in delight,
 And in his hand a windy fan did beare,
 That in the idle aire he mou'd still here and there.

say: a thin material, for cloaks plumes: feathers
 dight: arranged gate: movement plight: condition

And him beside marcht amorous *Desyre*,
 Who seemd of riper yeares, then th'other Swaine,
 Yet was that other swayne this elders syre,
 And gaue him being, commune to them twaine:
 His garment was disguised very vaine,
 And his embrodered Bonet sat awry;
 Twixt both his hands few sparkes he close did straine,
 Which still he blew, and kindled busily,
 That soone they life conceiu'd, & forth in flames did fly.

swaine: person twaine: two awry: off-center

Next after him went *Doubt*, who was yclad
 In a discolour'd cote, of straunge disguyse,
 That at his backe a brode Capuccio had,
 And sleeues dependant *Albanese*-wyse:
 He lookt askew with his mistrustfull eyes,
 And nicely trode, as thornes lay in his way,
 Or that the flore to shrinke he did auyse,
 And on a broken reed he still did stay
 His feeble steps, which shrunke, when hard theron he lay.

yclad: dressed Capuccio: hood of a cloak askew: sideways
 trode: stepped auyse: perceive reed: cane stay: support

With him went *Daunger*, cloth'd in ragged weed,
 Made of Beares skin, that him more dreadfull made,
 Yet his owne face was dreadfull, ne did need
 Straunge horror, to deforme his griesly shade;
 A net in th'one hand, and a rustie blade
 In th'other was, this Mischiefe, that Mishap;
 With th'one his foes he threatned to inuade,
 With th'other he his friends ment to enwrap:
 For whom he could not kill, he practizd to entrap.

weed: clothes griesly shade: horrible shadow

Next him was *Feare*, all arm'd from top to toe,
 Yet thought himselfe not safe enough thereby,
 But feard each shadow mouing to and fro,
 And his owne armes when glittering he did spy,
 Or clashing heard, he fast away did fly,
 As ashes pale of hew, and wingyheeld;
 And euermore on daunger fixt his eye,
 Gainst whom he alwaies bent a brasen shield,
 Which his right hand vnarmed fearefully did wield.

wingyheeld: with wings on his heels brasen: brass

With him went *Hope* in rancke, a handsome Mayd,
 Of chearefull looke and louely to behold;
 In silken samite she was light arayd,
 And her faire lockes were wouen vp in gold;
 She alway smyld, and in her hand did hold
 An holy water Sprinckle, dipt in deowe,
 With which she sprinckled fauours manifold,
 On whom she list, and did great liking sheowe,
 Great liking vnto many, but true loue to feowe.

samite: silk stuff arayd: dressed deowe: dew
 manifold: numerous list: wanted feowe: few

And after them *Dissemblance*, and *Suspect*
 Marcht in one rancke, yet an vnequall paire:
 For she was gentle, and of milde aspect,
 Courteous to all, and seeming debonaire,
 Goodly adorned, and exceeding faire:
 Yet was that all but painted, and purloynd,
 And her bright browes were deckt with borrowed haire:
 Her deedes were forged, and her words false coynd,
 And alwaies in her hand two clewes of silke she twynd.

purloined: stolen forged: made up clewes: hanks of thread

But he was foule, ill fauoured, and grim,
 Vnder his eyebrowes looking still askaunce;
 And euer as *Dissemblance* laught on him,
 He lowrd on her with daungerous eyeglauce;
 Shewing his nature in his countenance;
 His rolling eyes did neuer rest in place,
 But walkt each where, for feare of hid mischaunce,
 Holding a lattice still before his face,
 Through which he still did peepe, as forward he did pace.

askaunce: sideways lowrd: frowned countenance: face
 mischaunce: bad luck lattice: screen

Next him went *Griefe*, and *Fury* matcht yfere;
Griefe all in sable sorrowfully clad,
 Downe hanging his dull head, with heauy chere,
 Yet inly being more, then seeming sad:
 A paire of Pincers in his hand he had,
 With which he pinched people to the hart,
 That from thenceforth a wretched life they lad,
 In wilfull languor and consuming smart,
 Dying each day with inward wounds of dolours dart.

yfere: together sable: black clad: dressed
 chere: expression inly: inwardly lad: led
 languor: depression smart: pain dolours: sorrows

But *Fury* was full ill appareiled
 In rags, that naked nigh she did appeare,
 With ghastly lookes and dreadfull drierihed;
 For from her backe her garments she did teare,
 And from her head oft rent her snarled heare:
 In her right hand a firebrand she did tosse
 About her head, still roming here and there;
 As a dismayed Deare in chace embost,
 Forgetfull of his safety, hath his right way lost.

appareiled: dressed naked nigh: nearly naked
 oft rent her. . .reare: often tore her hair embast: surrounded

After them went *Displeasure* and *Pleasance*,
 He looking lompish and full sullein sad,
 And hanging downe his heauy countenance;
 She chearefull fresh and full of ioyance glad,
 As if no sorrow she ne felt ne drad;
 That euill matched paire they seemd to bee:
 An angry Waspe th'one in a viall had
 Th'other in hers an hony-lady Bee;
 Thus marched these sixe couples forth in faire degree.

lumpish: dull, slow countenance: face

After all these there marcht a most faire Dame,
 Led of two grysie villeins, th'one *Despight*,
 The other cleped *Cruelty* by name:
 She dolefull Lady, like a dreary Spright,
 Cald by strong charmes out of eternall night,
 Had deathes owne image figurd in her face,
 Full of sad signes, fearefull to liuing sight;
 Yet in that horror shewd a seemely grace,
 And with her feeble feet did moue a comely pace.

grysie: squalid cleped: named doleful: sorrowful
 spright: spirit

Her brest all naked, as net iuory,
 Without adorne of gold or siluer bright,
 Wherewith the Craftesman wons it beautify,
 Of her dew honour was despoyled quight,
 And a wide wound therein (O ruefull sight)
 Entrenched deepe with knife accursed keene,
 Yet freshly bleeding forth her fainting spright,
 (The worke of cruell hand) was to be seene,
 That dyde in sanguine red her skin all snowy cleene.

wons: habitually despoiled: unrobed sanguine: bloody

At that wide orifice her trembling hart
 Was drawne forth, and in siluer basin layd,
 Quite through transfixed with a deadly dart,
 And in her bloud yet steeming fresh embayd:
 And those two villeins, which her steps vpstayd,
 When her weake feete could scarcely her sustaine,
 And fading vitall powers gan to fade,
 Her forward still with torture did constraine,
 And euermore encreased her consuming paine.

embayd: bathed vpstayd: supported constrained: force

Next after her the winged God himselfe
 Came riding on a Lion rauenuous,
 Taught to obay the menage of that Elfe,
 That man and beast with powre imperious
 Subdeweth to his kingdome tyrannous:
 His blindfold eyes he bad a while vnbind,
 That his proud spoyle of that same dolorous
 Faire Dame he might behold in perfect kind;
 Which seene, he much reioyced in his cruell mind.

menage: household followers bad: ordered
 dolorous: sorrowful

Of which full proud, himselfe vp rearing hye,
 He looked round about with sterne disdain;
 And did suruay his goodly company:
 And marshalling the euill ordered traine,
 With that the darts which his right hand did straine,
 Full dreadfully he shooke that all did quake,
 And clapt on hie his coulourd winges twaine,
 That all his many it affraide did make:
 Tho blinding him againe, his way he forth did take.

vp rearing: raising up marshalling: ushering, leading ceremoniously
 twaine: two tho: then

Behinde him was *Reproch*, *Repentance*, *Shame*;
Reproch the first, *Shame* next, *Repent* behind:
Repentance feeble, sorrowfull, and lame:
Reproch despightfull, carelesse, and vnkind;
Shame most ill fauour'd, bestiall, and blind:
Shame lowrd, *Repentance* sigh'd, *Reproch* did scould;
Reproch sharpe stings, *Repentance* whips entwind,
Shame burning brond-yrons in her hand did hold:
 All three to each vnlike, yet all made in one mould.

lowrd: frowned

And after them a rude confused rout
 Of persons flockt, whose names is hard to read:
 Emongst them was sterne *Strife*, and *Anger* stout,
 Vnquiet *Care*, and fond *Vnthriftihead*,
 Lewd *Losse of Time*, and *Sorrow* seeming dead,
 Inconstant *Chaunge*, and false *Disloyaltie*,
 Consuming *Riotise*, and guilty *Dread*
 Of heauenly vengeance, faint *Infirmities*,
 Vile *Pouertie*, and lastly *Death* with infamie.

rout: crowd, troop read: explain fond: foolish
 infamie: shame

There were full many moe like maladies,
 Whose names and natures I note readen well;
 So many moe, as there be phantasies
 In wauering wemens wit, that none can tell,
 Or paines in loue, or punishments in hell;
 All which disguised marcht in masking wise,
 About the chamber with that Damozell,
 And then returned, hauing marched thrise,
 Into the inner roome, from whence they first did rise.

maladies: diseases I note readen: I can't explain
 thrise: three times

So soone as they were in, the dore streight way
 Fast locked, driuen with that stormy blast,
 Which first it opened; and bore all away.
 Then the braue Maid, which all this while was plast,
 In secret shade, and saw both first and last,
 Issewed forth, and went vnto the dore,
 To enter in, but found it locked fast:
 It vaine she thought with rigorous vprore
 For to efforce, when charmes had closed it afore.

Where force might not auaille, their sleights and art
 She cast to vse, both fit for hard emprize;
 For thy, from that same roome not to depart
 Till morrow next, she did her selfe auize,
 When that same Maske againe should forth arize.
 The morrow next appeard with ioyous cheare,
 Calling men to their daily exercize,
 Then she, as morrow fresh, her selfe did reare
 Out of her secret stand, that day for to out weare.

sleights: tricks cast: resolved emprize: undertaking
 for thy: therefore cheare: demeanor, being

All that day she outwore in wandering,
 And gazing on that Chambers ornament,
 Till that againe the second euening
 Her couered with her sable vestiment,
 Wherewith the worlds faire beautie she hath blent:
 Then when the second watch was almost past,
 That brasen dore flew open, and in went
 Bold *Britomart*, as she had late forecast,
 Neither of idle shewes, nor of false charmes aghast.

sable vestiment: black clothes blent: blinded brazen: brass
 aghast: afraid

So soone as she was entred, round about
 She cast her eies, to see what was become
 Of all those persons, which she saw without:
 But lo, they streight were vanisht all and some,
 Ne liuing wight she saw in all that roome,
 Saue that same woefull Ladie, both whose hands
 Were bounden fast, that did her ill become,
 And her small wast girt round with yron bands,
 Vnto a brasen pillour, by the which she stands.

Lo: expression of wonder or surprise saue: except

And her before the vile Enchaunter sate,
 Figuring straunge characters of his art,
 With liuing bloud he those characters wrate,
 Dreadfully dropping from her dying hart,
 Seeming transfixed with a cruell dart,
 And all perforce to make her him to loue.
 Ah who can loue the worker of her smart?
 A thousand charmes he formerly did proue;
 Yet thousand charmes could not her stedfast heart remoue.

wrate: wrote perforce: of necessity smart: pain
 steadfast: constant, consistant

Soone as that virgin knight he saw in place,
 His wicked bookes in hast he ouerthrew,
 Not caring his long labours to deface,
 And fiercely ronning to that Lady trew,
 A murdrous knife out of his pocket drew,
 The which he thought, for villeinous despight,
 In her tormented bodie to embrew:
 But the stout Damzell to him leaping light,
 His cursed hand withheld, and maistered his might.

despight: ill will embrew: stain with blood

From her, to whom his fury first he ment,
 The wicked weapon rashly he did wrest,
 And turning to her selfe his fell intent,
 Vnwares it strooke into her snowie chest,
 That little drops empurpled her faire brest.
 Exceeding wroth therewith the virgin grew,
 Albe the wound were nothing deepe imprest,
 And fiercely forth her mortall blade she drew,
 To giue him the reward for such vile outrage dew.

fell: deadly wroth: angry albe: although

So mightily she smote him, that to ground
 He fell halfe dead; next stroke him should haue slaine,
 Had not the Lady, which by him stood bound,
 Dernely vnto her called to abstaine,
 From doing him to dy. For else her paine
 Should be remedillesse, sith none but hee,
 Which wrought it, could the same recure againe.
 Therewith she stayd her hand, loth stayd to bee;
 For life she him enuyde, and long'd reuenge to see.

smote: hit sternly: severly sith: since loth: reluctant

And to him said, Thou wicked man, whose meed
 For so huge mischiefe, and vile villany
 Is death, or if that ought do death exceed,
 Be sure, that nought may saue thee from to dy,
 But if that thou this Dame doe presently
 Restore vnto her health, and former state;
 This doe and liue, else die vndoubtedly.
 He glad of life, that lookt for death but late,
 Did yield himselfe right willing to prolong his date.

meed: reward

And rising vp, gan streight to ouerlooke,
 Those cursed leaues, his charmes backe to reuerse;
 Full dreadfull things out of that balefull booke
 He red, and measur'd many a sad verse,
 That horror gan the virgins hart to perse,
 And her faire locks vp stared stiffe on end,
 Hearing him those same bloody lines reherse;
 And all the while he red, she did extend
 Her sword high ouer him, if ought he did offend.

leaves: pages of his magic books baleful: evil
 perse: pierce vp stared: stood up

Anon she gan perceiue the house to quake,
 And all the dores to rattle round about;
 Yet all that did not her dismaied make,
 Nor slacke her threatfull hand for daungers dout,
 But still with stedfast eye and courage stout
 Abode, to weet what end would come of all.
 At last that mightie chaine, which round about
 Her tender waste was wound, adowne gan fall,
 And that great brasen pillour broke in peeces small.

anon: immediately slacke: lesser dout: fear
 abode: remained to weet: to know brasen: brass

The cruell steele, which thirld her dying hart,
 Fell softly forth, as of his owne accord,
 And the wyde wound, which lately did dispart
 Her bleeding brest, and riuen bowels gor'd,
 Was closed vp, as it had not bene bor'd,
 And euery part to safety full sound,
 As she were neuer hurt, was soone restor'd:
 Tho when she felt her selfe to be vnbound,
 And perfect hole, prostrate she fell vnto the ground.

thirld: pierced dispart: divide riuen: split
 sound: healthy tho: then hole: whole

Before faire *Britomart*, she fell prostrate,
 Saying, Ah noble knight, what worthy meed
 Can wretched Lady, quit from wofull state,
 Yield you in lieu of this your gracious deed?
 Your vertue selfe her owne reward shall breed,
 Euen immortall praise, and glory wyde,
 Which I your vassall, by your prowesse freed,
 Shall through the world make to be notifyde,
 And goodly well aduance, that goodly well was tryde.

in lieu of: in recompense for vassall: servant
 prowesse: bravery tryde: attempted

But *Britomart* vpreparing her from ground,
 Said, Gentle Dame, reward enough I weene
 For many labours more, then I haue found,
 This, that in safety now I haue you seene,
 And meane of your deliuerance haue beene:
 Henceforth faire Lady comfort to you take,
 And put away remembrance of late teene;
 In stead thereof know, that your louing Make,
 Hath no lesse griefe endured for your gentle sake.

weene: know teene: sorrow make: mate

She much was cheard to heare him mentiond,
 Whom of all liuing wights she loued best.
 Then laid the noble Championesse strong hond
 Vpon th'enchauter, which had her distrest
 So sore, and with foule outrages opprest:
 With that great chaine, wherewith not long ygo
 He bound that pitteous Lady prisoner, now relest,
 Himselfe she bound, more worthy to be so,
 And captiue with her led to wretchednesse and wo.

wights: men sore: grievously

Returning backe, those goodly roomes, which erst
 She saw so rich and royally arayd,
 Now vanisht vtterly, and cleane subuerst
 She found, and all their glory quite decayd,
 That sight of such a chaunge her much dismayd.
 Thence forth descending to that perlous Porch,
 Those dreadfull flames she also found delayd,
 And quenched quite, like a consumed torch,
 That erst all entrens wont so cruelly to scorch.

erst: before arayd: decorated subverst: subverted, undermined
 perlous: perilous delayd: stopped
 line 9: That befoe was accustomed so cruelly to scorch all enterers

43

More easie issew now, then entrance late
 She found: for now that fained dreadfull flame,
 Which chokt the porch of that enchaunted gate,
 And passage bard to all, that thither came,
 Was vanisht quite, as it were not the same,
 And gaue her leaue at pleasure forth to passe.
 Th'Enchaunter selfe, which all that fraud did frame,
 To haue efforst the loue of that faire lasse,
 Seeing his worke now wasted deepe engrieued was.

issew: exit fained: pretended

44

But when the victoresse arriued there,
 Where late she left the pensife *Scudamore*,
 With her owne trusty Squire, both full of feare,
 Neither of them she found where she them lore:
 Thereat her noble hart was stonisht sore;
 But most faire *Amoret*, whose gentle spright
 Now gan to feede on hope, which she before
 Conceiued had, to see her owne dear knight,
 Being thereof beguyld was fild with new affright.

pensife: thoughtful lore: left spright: spirit
 peguyld: tricked

45

But he sad man, when he had long in drede
 Awayted there for *Britomarts* returne,
 Yet saw her not nor signe of her good speed,
 His expectation to despaire did turne,
 Misdeeming sure that her those flames did burne;
 And therefore gan aduize with her old Squire,
 Who her deare nourslings losse no lesse did mourne,
 Thence to depart for further aide t'enquire:
 Where let them wend at will, whilest here I doe respire.

good speed: success misdeeming: misjudging
 advize: consult wend: go

43

At last she came vnto the place, where late
 She left Sir *Scudamour* in great distresse,
 Twixt dolour and despight halfe desperate,
 Of his loues succour, of his owne redesse,
 And of the hardie *Britomarts* successe:
 There on the cold earth him now thrown she found,
 In wilfull anguish, and dead heauinesse,
 And to him cald; whose voices knowen sound
 Soone as he heard, himself he reared light from ground.

44

There did he see, that most on earth him ioyd,
 His dearest loue, the comfort of his dayes,
 Whose too long absence him had sore annoyd,
 And wearied his life with dull delayes:
 Straight he vpstart from the loathed layes,
 And to her ran with hasty egernesse,
 Like as a Deare, that greedily embayes
 In the coole soile, after long thirstinesse,
 Which he in chace endured hath, now nigh breathlesse.

45

Lightly he clipt her twixt his armes twaine,
 And streightly did embrace her body bright,
 Her body, late the prison of sad paine,
 Now the sweet lodge of loue and deare delight:
 But she faire Lady ouercommen quight
 Of huge affection, did in pleasure melt,
 And in sweete rauishment poured out her spright:
 No word they spake, nor earthly thing they felt,
 But like two senceles stocks in long embracement dwelt.

46

Had ye them seene, ye would haue surely thought,
 That they had beene that faire *Hermaphrodite*,
 Which that rich *Romane* of white marble wrought,
 And in his costly Bath causd to bee site:
 So seemd those two, as growne together quite,
 That *Britomart* halfe enuying their b[1]esse,
 Was much empassiond in her gentle sprite,
 And to her selfe oft wisht like happinesse,
 In vaine she wisht, that fate n'ould let her yet possesse.

47

Thus doe those louers with sweet counteruayle,
 Each other of loues bitter fruit despoile.
 But now my teme begins to faint and fayle,
 All woxen weary of their iournall toyle:
 Therefore I will their sweatie yokes assoyle,
 At this same furrowes end, till a new day:
 And ye faire swayns, after your long turmoyle,
 Now cease your worke, and at your pleasure play:
 Now cease your worke; to morrow is an holy day.